



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

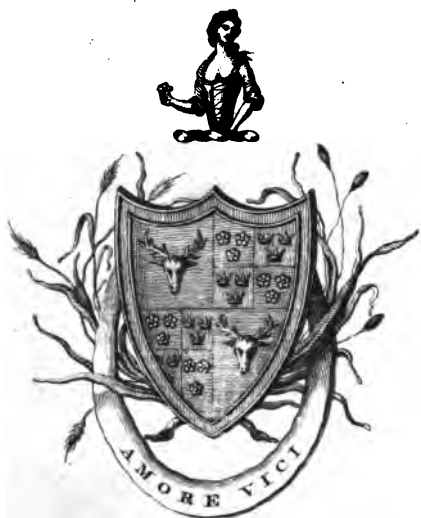
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

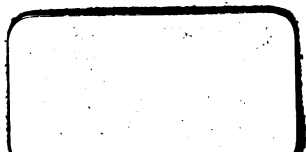
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





*Charles MacKenzie, Esq.<sup>r</sup>*  
**OF KILCOY**

256 e. 14867

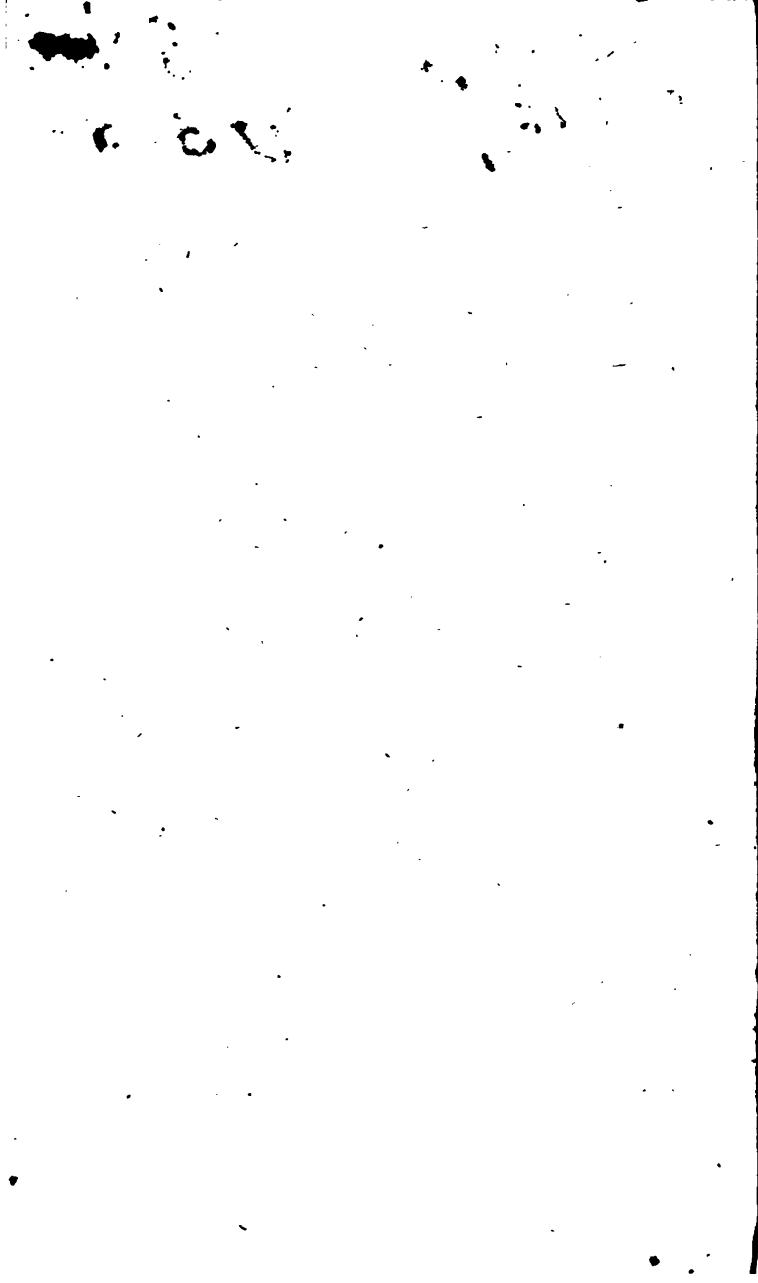


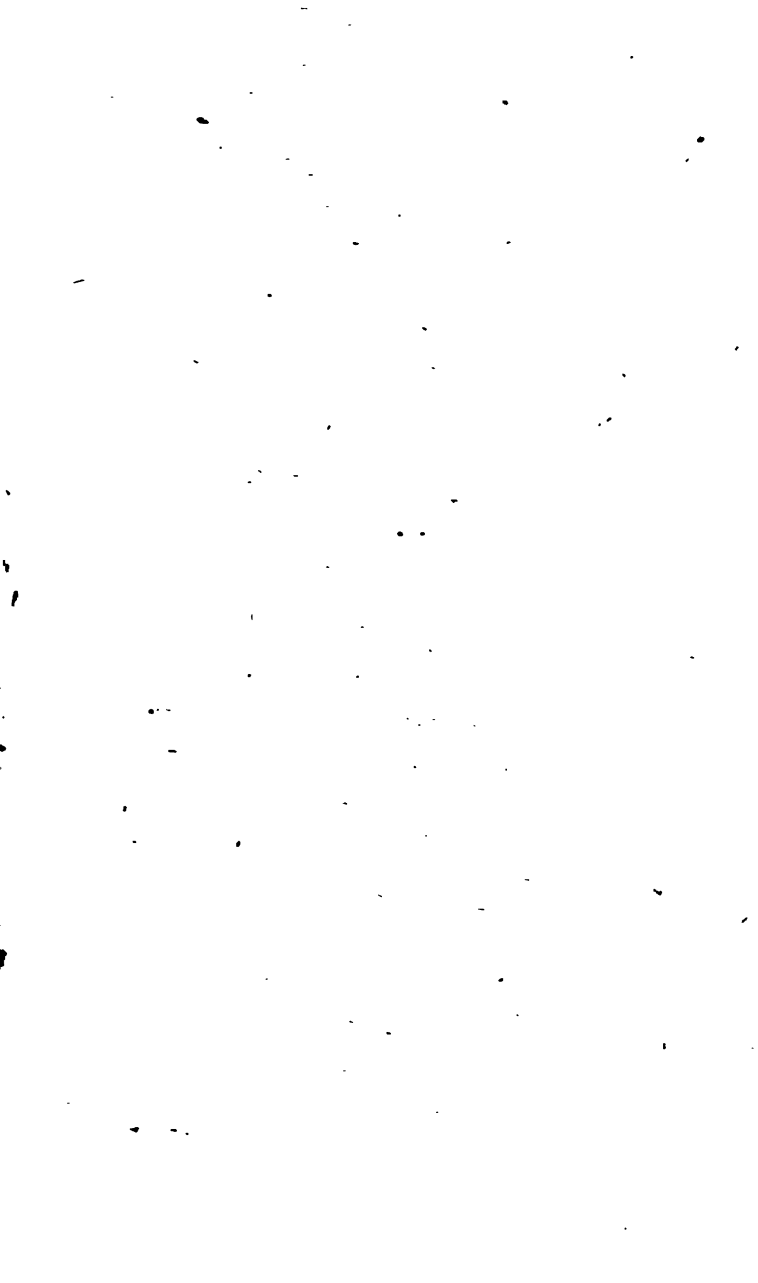
2 Vol. 7<sup>th</sup>

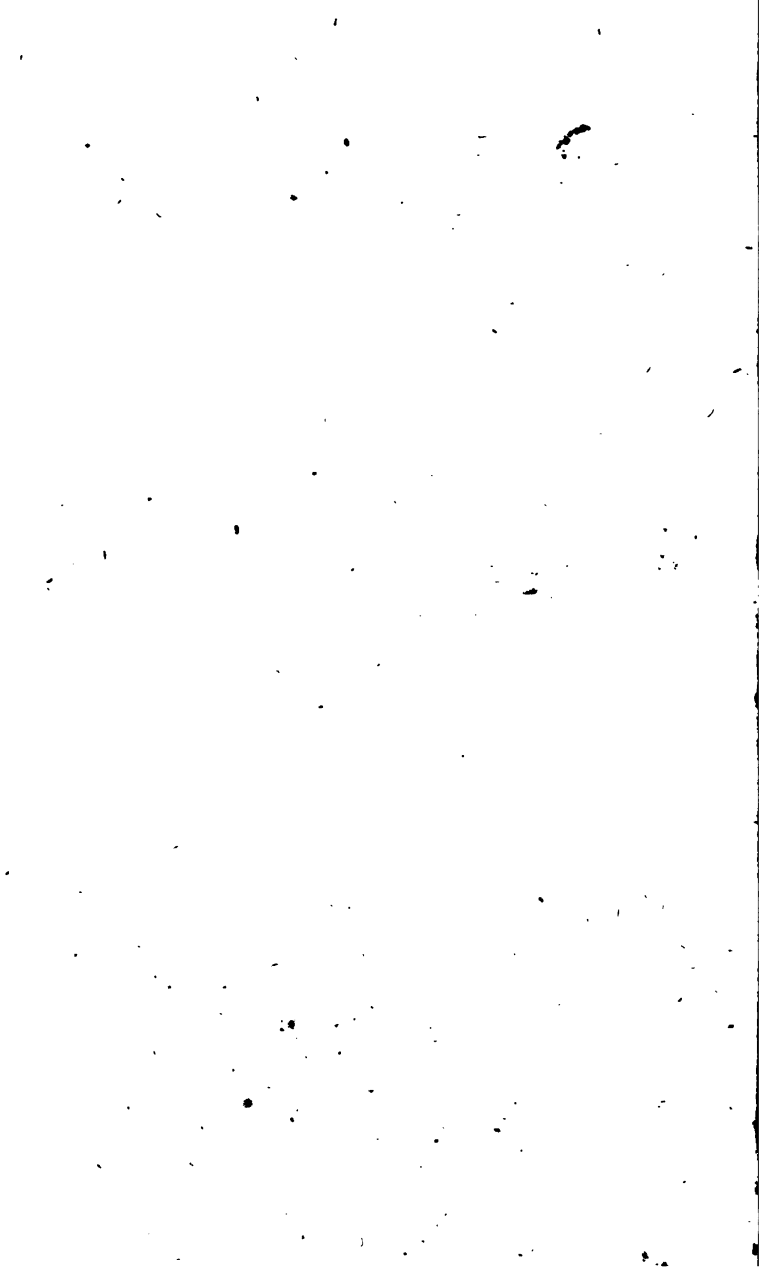
~~E. G. H.~~

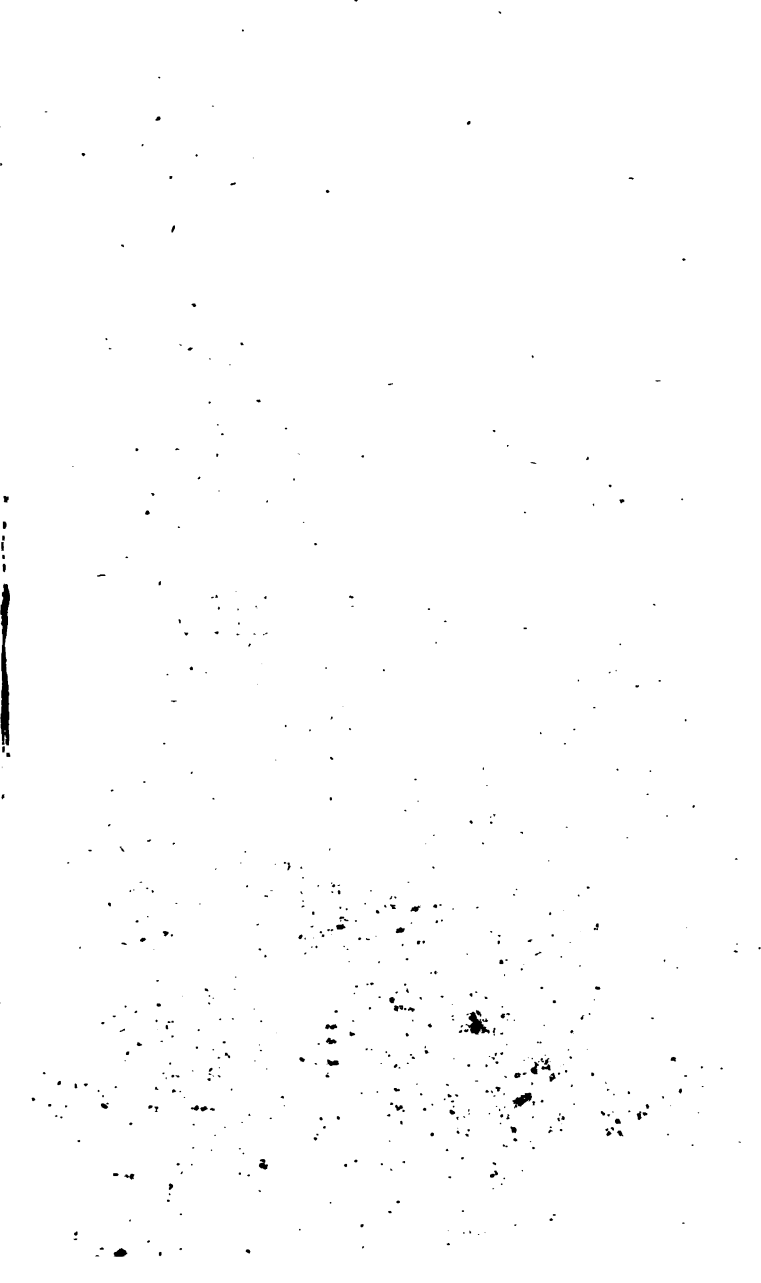
U. S. S.













THE  
L I F E  
AND  
ADVENTURES  
OF

Joe Thompson,

A Narrative founded on Fact.

---

*Written by Himself.*

---

*To wake the Soul, by tender Strokes of Art ;  
To raise the Genius, and to mend the Heart ;  
To make Mankind in conscious Virtue bold,  
Live o'er each Scene, and be what they behold :  
For this———*

POPE.

---

V O L. I.

---

A NEW EDITION.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for JOHN HINTON, at the *King's-Arms*,  
in *Pater-noster Row*; and W. FREDERICK, Book-  
seller, in *Bath*. M DCC LXXV.



---

THE  
EDITOR'S PREFACE.

**I**T may, perhaps, be expected, by the Reader, that some Account should be prefixed to this Work, more than he will find in the Work itself, of the Motives for publishing it; and such other Matters as Custom has made the Subject of a Preface; and, in order to comply with the natural Curiosity of this Country, which is still exploring farther and farther into the Reasons of Things, and is hardly ever to be satisfied, till it has sifted an Affair to the very Bottom, I am going to acquaint him, that, tho' Mr. *Thompson* has been some Years in *England*, the eager Desire, his numerous Friends and Acquaintance still expressed to hear him relate his Adventures, grew quite troublesome to him; and, in his own Defence, he yielded to my pressing Sollicitations to digest the various and uncommon Accidents that have chequered his Life, into a Narrative that should at once ease him of that Trouble of answering such Numbers of Questions, as were every Day put to him; and at the same Time I made Use of the aforesaid Rea-



son to induce him to write, I urged the Benefit it might be of to Mankind, to behold a Picture of human Nature, as it really is, struggling amidst the War of the Passions, that inspire the Breast, and, at length, thro' a Series of Temptations, getting the better of Vice, and adding to the Triumphs of Virtue and the Virtuous. Indeed, he began upon this Discourse, to think it his Duty to publish his Adventures, for which he has well given his other Reasons in the Beginning of his History. Was my Author known as much to the Public in general, as he is by his particular Friends, the Veracity of all he has related of himself would never fall into Doubt. Perhaps the Kingdom cannot boast a Man of more Worth, or more Honour; and he lives a Blessing to the World, and the Joy and Comfort of his Relations and Friends: But need I enlarge on his Character here, when he has so well portrayed himself in the Book before me, and has given us a thorough Representation of an honest, upright Heart? I know his Father, and have the greatest Veneration for the Son, who is a Gentleman of excellent Endowments; and has joined, to a finished Education, all the Experience that falls to a Man's Lot, who has seen the World, and inspected its Principles of Action on so many various Occasions. I promised him to revise and publish

lish his Performance ; and he insisted I should model it as I thought proper ; but, I must own, I found it far superior to Correction, and exceeding all my most sanguine Expectations ; and I ventured only upon two Alterations : He had wrote it as one continued Narrative ; but for the Reader's greater Pleasure, and the Benefit of his Memory, I have divided it into Chapters, and added Contents to each ; which I think, tho' a modern Way, is a Manner that is useful and pleasing ; and, as a celebrated Author says, is like erecting so many Baiting-places, or Inns, for the Traveller's Refreshment in his Peregrinations thro' our Work. The other Liberty I took was this, that tho' he had made use of real Names, I, knowing most of the Persons mentioned, thought it was not so eligible to suffer it to come Abroad in that Manner, and have changed many of the most remarkable, or best known Names, into fictitious ones, that are as expressive, as any I could pitch upon, of the Characters of the Persons they represent ; and I have used the same Freedom with the Names of Places in *England*, willing, as much as possible, to prevent any bad Effects that might arise from the Openness and Sincerity of my Author ; and I have had the Pleasure to receive a Letter of Thanks from him for my prudent Caution. Names signify nothing, they are Facts that my Reader

requires ; and the Reflections that naturally arise from certain Combinations of Accidents of good and bad Fortune ; by which Instruction and Improvement is conveyed to the Mind. And now I am naturally led to say somewhat of the Construction and Moral of the Piece before me. The *Life and Adventures of Jace Thompson* is a Delineation of the Condition of unhappy Mortals, who are subject to Misfortune, and the Assaults of Vice ; and, to attain any desirable End, must wade thro' a Sea of Troubles from without, and of Struggles and Combats from within ; and my Author, not content with relating Things simply, has deduced them from first Principles ; and has endeavoured to make it appear, that Man is not born with any natural Turpitude inherent in him ; and that it requires a long Habit of Vice and bad Company intirely to root out those Ideas of Religion and Virtue he is supplied with by Nature, and a good and careful Education ; nor, that once done, can an ingenuous Mind thus, for ever, be debased, but will rise again from the Rubbish that surrounds it on every Side, again become sound and reasonable. The several *Episodes* that are interspersed, here and there, as the Adventures of Mrs. *Goadwill*, Mr. *Prim*, Mr. *Saris*, &c. have all of them so visible a good Tendency, that the Moral need not be pointed

ed

ed out; and the whole Work may be said to exhibit the Triumphs of Virtue, all benign, serene, and amiable; and the Defeats of Vice baneful, obnoxious, and ruinous, to Mankind both in Soul and Body. I must look upon my Author a little in another Light also, with Regard to the Reflections, Maxims and instructive Lessons, scattered thro' every Page of his Adventures. And here I must own his Manner and Spirit charms me; and gives me so high an Opinion of his Sagacity and Good Sense, that, tho' I ever had the greatest Affection for him, yet methinks, whenever I read those Breathings, let me call them, of a generous and noble Soul, my Affection is heightened, to a prodigious Degree, more than ever; and I believe our Reader will admit with me, that they make the Work a *System of Ethics and Morality*, as much as it is an History, or Series of Adventures.

The *French*, who are noted for their numerous Lives and Memoirs, have introduced the most trifling and jejune Circumstances, that happen to a Man, therein, by which they have made that kind of Writing the Subject of Ridicule and Satire; but, sure, if, with proper Dignity and Decorum, the Transactions of a busy Life are given to the World, it may be said to become as useful, or more so than the most shining Examples exhibited

in Person, as it makes a greater Impression upon the Heart, and sinks more deeply into the Mind: And I must say this for our Countrymen, that they have given the World Works of this Nature, that far surpass the Productions of our Neighbours; and have in them all the easy Flow and Politeness of the *French*, together with the nervous Strength and Fire of the *English*. And I believe it will be admitted, without Dispute, that this brave Nation display, in their *Histories* and *Biography*, a Manner and Sentiment peculiar to a free People, which can never be imitated by the Slaves of *despotic Governments*.

The Language of my Author is beautiful and applicable to the Subject he treats of; common Events are related in familiar Words, but, when it is required, no one can rise into more apt and proper Strains, and in those you discover the Man, and the genuine Cast and Disposition of his Soul. You have no uncouth and unnatural Flights of the false Sublime; no distorted Images are introduced; nor is the Fancy bewildered with far fetched Figures and crude Ideas, which never existed any where but in the Brain of the Writer. The whole Production is one even *champaign* Country; and the verdant Hills and leafy Thickets, that are here and there interspersed, are so many Beauties that add to the delightful Prospect of the fruitful Plain,

Plain, without tiring or sickening the Sight. The very Subject of Love is treated of with a Delicacy that must please and charm ; and, tho' all the Justice due to the delightful Sex is done them, yet, in the most warm and passionate Flights, nothing is said or implied that can shock the nicest Ear, or kindle a Blush even in the Face of Innocence herself.

In a Word, I look upon it as a Book of the utmost Merit, and, I will say, Importance, particularly to the Youth of both Sexes, as inculcating just Notions of Things, wiping the Prejudices of Education from the Mind, inspiring generous and worthy Sentiments, encouraging Benevolence, Love to Mankind, and all the social Virtues and Duties that ought to reside in the Bosom of rational Creatures : I might say also, in the Words of my Motto, It serves

*To wake the Soul by tender Strokes of Art ;  
To raise the Genius, and to mend the Heart.*

*History* and *Lives* have been agreed, on all Hands, and by the Consent of all Ages, to be of the greatest Value to the World, if they relate the Actions of the Writer or Hero with Fidelity and Impartiality. *History* may be said to be the general Fountain, *Biography* a Stream that runs from it. As the Fountain is not so accessible to the Generality of the World, it cannot be of such universal

Use as the Stream which every one can come to, to slake his Thirst at after Knowledge; and there, in that transparent Mirror, may behold himself, and learn how to form his future Behaviour in Life: Besides, *History* usually treats of the Actions of such Beings as are beyond the common Ken, the Great and the Exalted; who, as they seldom act by Rule themselves, are very improper Patterns for other People beneath them.

The Life of a Man, faithfully related, if crowded, like that of Mr. *Thompson*, with a Variety of interesting Events, by the Entertainment it must of Course afford, captivates the Mind, and carries one on to read, whether one will or no. 'Tis drawn by these captivating Strains that we pursue the Thread of the most crabbed Truths with Pleasure; and the most sublime Dictates, which had else, perhaps, never employed our Thoughts, become taking and familiar. Virtue, as represented by certain four *Philosophers* and *Divines*, wears so many discouraging Airs about her, that the Soul, young and pliant to the Baits of Pleasure, looks on her with Aversion, and denies Harbour to the troublesome Guest, who seems to frown upon him with too much Austerity. Thence arose the ancient Method of instructing by Fable, from which it would be no hard Matter to prove that every other is derived, tho' I own

it to be a bold Assertion. Wise Men and Tutors to the rising Generation began to see their Error in telling home Truths, and forcing dogmatical Maxims on the young Mind; they therefore gilt the Pill, and, under these little Tales, brought by Degrees, to Perfection, what too much Precipitancy and Severity would have rendered for ever distasteful.

Works of the biographical Sort, as they have employed the Pains of the Authors, so have they gained the Applause of all Countries; and, from a View of the Usefulness of them and the Emolument arising from thence, some *Gent* have endeavoured to improve upon the Matter, and have published great Numbers of fictitious *Lives* and *Histories* of Persons that never have existed; and a Swarm of *Romances* have overspread and deluged the World: Some of them execrably planned, rather to corrupt unwary Youth, by representing all sober and regular Behaviour as ridiculous, and prostituting the most sacred Characters to Reproach. We have bad Men of all Ranks, no doubt; but there are some Orders of Men, that, in a peculiar Manner, ought rather to have their Vices concealed, than exposed, as the Ignorant are apt to make very odd Constructions, and to recur from the Person, and charge that on his Profession, which ought only to be charged upon



the Man: Others, to excite Mirth, and entertain the Reader's vicious Taste, have represented such strange and ludicrous Characters, as sure never existed, but in Imagination; uncouth as the Characters of the famed *Rabelais*, which no one can liken to any Thing but those shadowy, fantastic Representations of the *baseless Fabric of a Vision*, that sport in our Fancies, when laid in the Arms of Sleep. Others there are, who, indeed, may boast of great Beauties, and their Authors of great Merit; in which Virtue is inculcated in a most amiable Manner, and the Heart is, Step by Step, led on to generous and noble Sentiments; but still, whilst they have the Characters of *Romances*, People will not give themselves the needful Trouble to inspect the Moral, or, if they do, imagining it the Product of mere Imagination, it passes off as a fine fangled Tale, and makes no deep or lasting Impression. In a real Life founded on Facts, like this, of a Person now in Being, where every thing may be depended upon, and goes upon the Standard of Truth; where it wears those indelible Marks of Fidelity that distinguish it from all Fiction and Invention; where one Fact or Circumstance naturally flows from another, and you see nothing either impossible or improbable in the Narration; real Service is done to Mankind; and we can't forbear comparing the Character

rafter of the Author with our own, and endeavouring to imitate the bright and shining Parts of his Conduct and Behaviour, and to efchew thofe Parts which appear to us abfurd, immoral, and ridiculous: And I think, where the Life, fo written, proceeds from the Pen of the Hero himfelf, Things are fo intimately described, and the Motions of the Heart are fo anatomifed and diffedted, and he relates what he feels, or has felt, fo fenfibly, that it adds fresh Force and Vigour to every Thing the Writer would inculcate; and we alternately, with him, feel the Starts of Joy, and the Movements and Burfts of Sorrow, upon every reviving or mortifying Occurrence that happens.

My Author, I think, is all over new, and has followed the Track of no former Writer; his Style and Manner is peculiar to himfelf; nor has he borrowed any Thing from others, fave here and there a beautiful Passage his Memory fuggested to him, from our beft and fineft Poets: This our Reader will rather account, I dare fay, a Perfection than a Blemifh, and thank him for it, as they are not brought in incongruoufly and improperly.

Thus I commend *Joe Thompson* to the Perufal of all Ranks of People. The Fair of this happy Land will rife improved from their Reading, as well as the generous Youth, who pants after Inftitution. In *Families* it fhould  
become

xiv      *The* EDITOR'S, &c.

become a kind of *Monitor*, and in *Schools* a *Vade Mecum*: And that it may be as much admired by others, as it is by me, and may be of universal Service to Mankind, is the sincere and hearty Prayer of

*The* EDITOR.



C O N.

# CONTENTS.

## CHAP. I.

**T**HE Author's Motives for writing his Adventures.—His Birth.—Account of his Parents.—Management of him till he arrives to an Age sufficient for School.—Is put under the Tuition of Mr. Profody. ————— Page i.

## CHAP. II.

*Digression on Schoolmasters. — Character of Mr. Profody and his Wife, and their Daughter Ursula.—Miserable Temper of his Master and Mistress.—Avarice thought to be constitutional.—Miss Ursula in Love, which is opposed by her Father.—He makes great Progress in his Learning. — Almost starved. — Robs Orchards. — Is severely punished.* ————— 8

## CHAP. III.

*He robs his Master's favourite Pear-tree.—Is discovered, and severely scourged.—Soothed by his Master and Mistress.—Resolves to be revenged.—Catastrophe of an extravagant Gentleman, whose Ghost haunts his Master's House.*

*House.—He terrifies his Master and the Family.—Account of the Confusion they are in.* ————— Page 15.

## C H A P. IV.

*Miss Ursula runs away with her Sweetheart.—They examine the House.—The Daughter returns.—She discovers the Prank, and the Author of it.—They are seized and confined. Make their Escape.—He gets to his Father's with his Comrades.* ————— 23

## C H A P. V.

*His Reception at Home with his Comrades.—They are reprov'd by his Father.—Several excellent Observations.—His Father, with those of his Companions, pay a Visit to Mr. Profody.—His Behaviour thereon.* 30

## C H A P. VI.

*His Father's Manner of Education.—Sharpley is sent to Sea, and Archer to Oporto.—Proper Reflections.—Takes great Delight in Hunting, and gains the Friendship of Sir Walter Rich, by a generous Action.—His Father determines to send him to London.* 36

## C H A P. VII.

*Excellent Discourse of his Father to him.—He receives Letters from Sharpley and Archer.—Sets out with his Father and Mother*

# C O N T E N T S. xvii

*ther for London.—Arrives there.—Reflections on the first Views of that Place.—He is bound Apprentice to Mr. Diaper, a Wholesale Linnen-draper. ——— Page 44*

## C H A P. VIII.

*Character of Mr. Diaper, his Wife, and Son.—Very assiduous in his Business.—Contracts a Friendship with young Diaper.—Gains the Esteem of his Master.—Manner of spending their vacant Hours.—Reflections on Trade and Commerce. ——— 52*

## C H A P. IX.

*He is surprised by the Carriage of a Maid-Servant.—Her extraordinary Assiduity to oblige him.—She betrays her Love for him.—His Efforts to cure her.—He is seduced by her.—His Uneasiness thereon.—She becomes troublesome to him, and jealous.—Cautions to Youth.—He grows cold to his Friend.—Seeks Company.—Becomes acquainted with Prim the Mercer, and Prig the Attorney. 58*

## C H A P. X.

*Account of his new Associates. He is disgusted with their Manners and Behaviour.—Becomes acquainted with Mr. Speculist.—He imbibes his Principles.—Turns Rake.—Removes his Mistress to ready furnished Lodgings, where she is brought to Bed. 65*

C H A P.

## CHAP. XI.

*His Extravagancy perceived by his Father's Friend, to whom he was intrusted.—He advises him.—He grows quite neglectful of his Business.—Tender Discourse between him and young Diaper.—Extravagancy of his Miss.—Quarrels with her.—Discovers her Infidelity.—Parts with her.—Receives a Letter from his Father. ————— Page 71*

## CHAP. XII.

*He frequents the Playhouse.—Converses with Women of the Town.—Resorts to Bawdy-houses.—Adventures at a noted Bagnio.—Beats the Watch.—Is carried with Prim to the Watch-house.—They are released.—Pays a Debt for Prig.—Commences an Acquaintance with Mrs. Modish. — 84*

## CHAP. XIII.

*Fatal Consequences of his Amour.—Goes to the Masquerade.—Picked up at Vauxhall Gardens.—He is beat and stripped.—Gets to Mr. Speculift's Lodgings.—Catastrophe of Prim.—Contracts a bad Distemper.—Is quite reduced.—Pawns his Watch.—Goes to the Gaming-table.—Is kicked down Stairs.—Meets Prig at Tom King's.—Returns Home.—Is well received. ————— 96*

## CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

*Packer wrongs his Master, and is discharged.  
—Discovers Thompson's Practices to Mr.  
Diaper.—Generous Behaviour of young  
Diaper.—He rescues him from Robbers.—  
Bravery of Prig.—He is highly caressed by  
his Master and Mistress. — Page 116*

CHAP. XV.

*Discourse between him and young Diaper.—  
They are tricked by Gamblers.—He borrows  
Money.—Is scurvily used by Speculist.—  
A Discovery, which surprises him. 125*

CHAP. XVI.

*Speculist waits upon Mr. Diaper, who re-  
proves Thompson.—He confesses his Folly.  
—Is pardoned.—Excellent Behaviour of his  
Master.—Permitted to visit his Father and  
Mother, with his Friend.—They set out on  
their Journey. ————— 138*

CHAP. XVII.

*Digression on the Beauties of the Country.—  
They overtake Company, to whom they are  
known.—Are entertained at Mr. Bellair's.  
—Diaper falls in Love with Miss Susanna  
Bellair.—He relieves her from a great  
Danger.—His Passion approved by her Bro-  
ther*



## xx CONTENTS.

*ther.—Meets with a Return from her.—  
They pursue their Journey. — Page 146*

### CHAP. XVIII.

*Story of the enchanted Bridle.—Midnight Adventures in the Inn.—Discourse between Dr. Talisman, Parson Zealot, and Gage, the Exciseman.—Fatal Consequences of their Dispute.—They arrive at Mr. Thompson's.—Joy at their Arrival. — 154*

### CHAP. XIX.

*He gives his Father an Account of his Master's Goodness.—Is pardoned his late Follies.—Receives a Present from his Mother.—The Author's Person described.—Visits Sir Walter Rich.—His Reception there.—Character of Miss Louisa Rich.—Mr. Diaper receives a Letter, which occasions his Departure. 171*

### CHAP. XX.

*He is enamoured with Miss Louisa.—Combates with his Passion.—Resolves to conquer it.—Mr. Diaper's Advice overcomes his Resolution.—Sir Walter fetches them to his House. ——— — 184*

### CHAP. XXI.

*They are received with great Pleasure by Miss Louisa.—He dances with her at the Ball.—  
An*

# C O N T E N T S. xxi

*An Accident discovers his Affection to her.—The Reception it meets with.—He is assaulted and wounded, by some Persons unknown.—Carried to Sir Walter's.—Distress of Miss Louisa, on the Occasion.—She declares her Love for him.    Page 191*

## C H A P. XXII.

*Miss Louisa confesses her Regard for him.—Her amiable Sincerity and Prudence.—He is overcome by her Goodness.—They vow eternal Constancy.—Natural Rhapsody on Love.—Their Conjectures of the late Assault.    202*

## C H A P. XXIII.

*She makes him her Confidant.—Her amiable Benevolence and Charity.—She surprises him by a Proof of her Goodness.—Story of an unfortunate Family.—Advice to young Ladies.—He makes a Discovery which he imparts to her.—Her Sentiments of Religion.    211*

## C H A P. XXIV.

*Mr. Diaper receives Letters from his Father, with a Letter inclosed from Prig.—Odd Account of Speculist.—News arrives from Archer and Sharpley.—Unhappy End of Mr. Profody.—His Discourse with his Mother, in Relation to Louisa.—He receives a Letter of Caution by an unknown Hand.    222*

C H A P.

## C H A P. XXV.

*Sir Walter surprises the two Lovers.—His Behaviour thereon.—Is forbid the House.—They correspond by Letter.—Their Correspondence discovered.—Her Woman discharged.—She is privately conveyed away.*

Page 230

## C H A P. XXVI.

*He pursues after her.—Meets 'Squire Rich.—Dares him to Combat, which he Coward-like refuses.—Prepares to punish him, but he escapes.—Is overtaken.—He fires at him, and brings him down.—Is knocked off his Horse by one of the 'Squire's Attendants himself.—Found by certain Passengers in a bloody Condition, who convey him to their House in their Chariot.—Is known by a Lady, whom he in vain endeavours to recollect.*

242

## C H A P. XXVII.

*The great Care that is taken of him by the strange Gentleman.—He has a remarkable Dream which operates towards his Recovery.—Understands who his generous Benefactor is, who amazes him, by acknowledging a Favour done to his Lady.* —

247

C H A P.

C H A P. XXVIII.

*He advertises his Friend, where to find him.—  
 Receives a Visit from Madam Goodwill.  
 —His Amazement at the Sight of her.—  
 Who she proves to be.—She relates her Ad-  
 ventures. — — — Page 252*

C H A P. XXIX.

*He satisfies Mrs. Goodwill's Inquiries.—She  
 engages to take Fidele into her Service.—  
 Mr. Diaper arrives, with whom he returns  
 to his Father's.—Receives a Letter from  
 Louisa.—His Friend and he set out for Lon-  
 don.—They arrive at Mr. Bellair's. 270*

C H A P. XXX.

*A generous Proposal of Mr. Bellair's.—Mr.  
 Diaper happy in the View of his future  
 Bliss.—The tender Parting of the two Lc-  
 vers.—They set out for London.—Arrive  
 there.—Are most affectionately received by  
 Mr. and Mrs. Diaper. — 280*

C H A P. XXXI. ,

*He grows melancholy.—His Master suffers  
 another great Loss.—His Friend's Distress  
 thereon.—Letter to him from Miss Susanna  
 Bellair.—Mr. Diaper writes to Mr. Thomp-  
 son on Account of his Son's Condition.—  
His*

*His Father writes him a Letter which increases his Disorder.—Mr. Diaper fails.—Behaviour of that worthy Man upon the unfortunate Occasion.—He gives Thompson his Indentures, accompanied with proper Advice.* — — — Page 284

## C H A P. XXXII.

*Mr. Diaper discovers his Purpose to Thompson.—He takes Leave of Miss Bellair.—Is accompanied to Gravesend by Thompson and Prig —Their tender Farewel.—He embarks for China.—Meets with an old Acquaintance at Blackwall.—Her Story, and Death.—They save a Woman from drowning.—Who she proves to be.—Sequel of her Story.*  
299



T H E

---

THE  
L I F E  
AND  
ADVENTURES  
OF  
JOE THOMPSON.

---

CHAP. I.

*The Author's Motives for writing his Adventures.—His Birth.—Account of his Parents.—Management of him till he arrives to an Age sufficient for School.—Is put under the Tuition of Mr. Profody.*

**W**HEN a Man's Life has been one continued Scene of Misfortunes and Distress; and when these Ills have been brought upon him, principally by his own bad Conduct, his prevailing Vices, and repeated Crimes; he cannot possibly be suspected to be acted upon by Vanity, or a Lust of Applause, to relate his Adventures. Such a Relation must, then, be dictated by other and better Motives, for it would

## 2 *The Life and Adventures*

be absurd to suppose, that the Writer could reap any Self-satisfaction, by making the humbling and mortifying Discovery of such Actions, as must incur the Censure, and be despised by the Bulk of Mankind, and can never engage their Approbation.

The Recapitulation of a Life, even of the most shining Events, should propose some superior Gratification to the Mind, than the Desire of Praise, or an Inclination to perpetuate a Name; these are mean and low Spurs to such an Attempt; and believe me, gentle Reader, was I not thoroughly convinced from Reason, as well as an higher Authority, that every Aim, every Action of our Lives, should as well be directed to the Good of our Fellow-creatures, as to our own Purposes; and that I am silently accused by my own Conscience, for not having been of so much Use, by setting a proper Example, which is the great Work of Life, as I am assured is the Design of Providence, that every Individual should do; but have perverted the Ends of my Existence, in the grossest Manner, in the former Part of my Time; I should have had no Inclination to have submitted this History to thy Inspection. 'Tis, as much as lies in my Power, to atone for my former Neglect, which sits heavily upon my Soul, that I venture to appear thus upon the Stage, and to act over again those Scenes which plunged me into the most torturing Mis-

eries.

ries. If my Pains answer the End I sincerely propose; if, whilst the Entertaining and the Amusing captivates the Reader, I may be the Means to caution the giddy and thoughtless Part of the World, from the Pursuit of Folly and Extravagance, by a lively Representation of the Sufferings they never fail to produce: If by representing lovely Virtue, in all her Flow of genuine, native Charms, with all her Train of inspiring, encouraging Rewards, I subdue and melt the Heart to a Love and Veneration for her Precepts: If by displaying Vice, all baneful and odious, stripped of those artful ensnaring Disguises, that so bewitch our depraved Appetites, I make some of her Votaries sicken at the nauseous Sight, and abandon her guilty Triumphs, over the Reason and over the good Sense of our Race; great will be my Reward, and I shall applaud myself for my Labour.

A pleasant and well situated Village, in the West Riding of *Yorkshire*, was the Place of my Nativity. My Father was a Clergyman, and descended from a Family of considerable Repute in that County. He enjoyed the Village where I was born, of which he had been the Incumbent for near ten Years before. From a fond and tender Affection, he married my Mother, without the least Consideration of adding to his Fortune: But, tho' they had been wedded for five Years, they had had no Child, to their great Concern and Disquiet: so



that I was received with the utmost Festivity and Rejoicing, as a Boon from Providence, like the Child of the Promise. Our Neighbourhood was surrounded by Gentlemen's Seats, and the Parish in general had a most high Esteem for my Father. He was then in the full Vigour of his Age. An Education of the most generous and liberal Cast had humanized his Mind, without giving him that uncouth Stiffness, that unsociable Behaviour, very often the disagreeable Attendants of Learning and Study. To a perfect Knowledge of Books, in almost every Language, he had joined a Knowledge of Mankind, and a Politeness of Address ; which, without taking from the Dignity of his Function, discovered, in every Thing he said or did, the fine Gentleman. Tho' he was a thorough Son of the Church of *England*, he never, either in his Sermons, or common Discourse, betrayed the least Animosity or Prejudice against the many Sects and Parties into which Religion is divided ; but prayed for, and wished well to, every honest, upright Man, let his Manner of Thinking, as to the speculative Part of Religion, be what it would. He was, at once, the Pastor, the Physician, and the Umpire of every Dispute that arose, amongst his Flock : And, as his Living was a very good one, he never exacted his Dues with Severity, and exercised, on every Occasion, the most diffusive Benevolence, Charity, and Hospitality. He had married my Mother,

ther, whilst he was at the University, and had ever preserved the tenderest Regard and Affection for her, the sole and only Object of his fondest Wishes. Nature seemed in her to have formed a Recompence for so much Virtue and Goodness as existed in my Father : Her Person was agreeable ; but such a Mind shone thro' that Person, as wonderfully dignified every Action of her Life. The little Levities and Fraikies of the Sex she was an utter Stranger to ; her very Love to her Husband was conducted with an Air of so much real good Sense and Discretion, that every-body was charmed that approached her. He had furnished her Soul with every useful Knowledge that renders a Woman amiable and useful ; which rather was improved by the Oeconomy and domestic Management of her Family Affairs, in which she took great Delight, and where a Regularity and Decorum is so much the Ornament of a good Woman. They lived together in a real Harmony and Friendship, which Trifles never had the Power to disturb ; and then were so happy as to have had very few considerable Disquiets.

Such was the Pair to whom I had the Happiness to be born ; and I the more particularly have described them, to let the World know that I had no Excuse to plead for my subsequent Follies, from the bad Qualities or Examples of my Parents ; which have generally so visible an-Effect on the Actions of their Children.

When I arrived at about three Years of Age, my Father who doated upon me, took me under the Shadow of his own Wings, and began to teach me the Use of my Letters; his Maxim being, that even that infantile Branch of Education should be conducted with Propriety, and not trusted to old Women, who can scarcely see the Letters they pretend to teach. Under his endearing Care, at Five I read every Thing with a proper Emphasis; and had imbibed from him such Precepts of Morality as suited with my Years. At Six I could write a tolerable good Hand, and was esteemed a very sharp and promising Child. My Proficiency surprized every-body; and the quick Progress I made induced the Country Women to say, That it was impossible I should live, I was so sharp and so witty.

My Father, who very much approved of the Way of Education in public Schools, in my ninth Year, by which Time I had made some Progress in the *Latin* Tongue, determined to send me from Home, for my further Instruction in the Languages. He used to say, That a Number of Youths together generally spurred and excited each other to an Emulation in their Pursuit of Learning, and laid the Foundation of a Knowledge of the World, and of Friendships with one another, of the utmost Use in the future Course of Life.

As

As I had been so tenderly treated at Home, the Thoughts of being sent from my Parents gave me some childish Concern, which was soon dissipated when I was informed how many Sports I should partake of with my Schoolfellows ; for I had yet had no other Companions than my Father's Family, he himself having condescended to divert himself with joining in my most puerile Amusements.

After some Difficulty, my Father fixed upon a Gentleman of his own Order, near a Town about twenty Miles from us, who kept a Boarding-School, whom he knew to be a Man of considerable Learning, and who had also the Reputation of treating his Scholars with Humanity and Kindness : Accordingly, after every Thing was provided, my Father and Mother set out with me for the House of Mr. *Profody*, for that was the Name of my intended Tutor.

At our Arrival, we were received by this Gentleman with great Civility. Every Thing settled, and Dinner over, they took their Leaves of me, whilst I could not refrain from Tears, which I shed in Abundance at this first Separation from them ; my Mother not forgetting to leave me a Token of her Love in my Pocket, which was of great Importance to gain the Good-will of my Schoolfellows.

most unfavourable Idea of a Mind that could so uncouthly paint a Village with Lines of Ill nature and Sourness. He was, indeed, a good classical Scholar ; and, in saying that, you exhausted the whole Scope of Praise that was justly due to him. To his Family and Pupils he was a complete Tyrant ; and, in the Exercise of the Birchen Discipline, *Busby* of old was but a meer Type of him. He had the most profound Regard to Orthodoxy in Opinion, and did not scruple to damn all those that differed from him in Sentiment, either as to Religion or Politicks ; and his Neighbours in general stigmatized him with the Name of a Jacobite, and, indeed, he really was a concealed Nonjuror : However, the Complaisance of the World agreed to look upon him as a good Pedagogue, and in that Capacity he had existed all the latter Days of his Life, and had raised a pretty considerable Sum of Money in that Employment. His Wife, Mrs. *Deborah Prosdocky*, was as odd a Figure as can possibly be imagined : She was somewhat protuberant behind, which has robbed her of her Fulness before ; and her Face was a most disagreeable Assortment of forbidding Features ; small light-coloured Eyes she had, but so buried in their Sockets, that they could be compared only to those of an Owl ; and the Motion of her Eye-lids resembled somewhat that of the nictating Membrane of Birds ; her Mouth was screwed up, and betrayed her Deficiency of Teeth ;

and.

and the pointed Extremities of her Chin and Nose were in such Approximation with each other, that the former generally plentifully bedewed the latter with its trickling Distillations ; her Skin appeared like a Parchment that has been shriveled up by the Heat of the Fire ; and this worthy Personage had been very assiduous to assist her Husband's accumulating Temper, by pinching the Guts of the Boys, in equal Proportion to the Food he bestowed upon their Brains. Her Avarice was unbounded, and she betrayed her Disposition in every Action she performed ; she used to harangue plentifully on the salutiferous and grateful Nature of Soups, and the excellent Properties of Mutton Dripping, which was, from its healing and balsamic Qualities, given to us in lieu of Butter ; and, as to Water, she had discovered more Virtues in the Use of it than ever *Hancock* did. Her Stature was low, and a constant Habit of Fretfulness kept her as lean as the Picture of *Famine* could be supposed to be. I cannot help observing, by the bye, that Avarice generally lurks under such Appearances ; and I question if that Vice is not in some Measure constitutional ; for where Nature has denied that Flow of generous Juices that warm and invigorate the human Frame, and has bestowed them in a spare and niggard Manner, the Heart diffends not to generous and kind Sentiments, feels not the Warmth of Benevolence and Charity ; but, being buried and confined in an

adust or frigid Breast, dies away into the starveling Ideas of Jealousy, Suspicion, and Covetousness ; most of the Subjects of their sordid Reign being of this Meagre Frame, and Habit of Body.

Miss *Ursula*, the Daughter and Heiress of this mighty Pedagogue, was turned of Thirty, and had been a Slave to the Humours of her Parents from her Cradle ; whose Authority *Love* had now made her demur to, she having conceived an Affection for Mr. *Job Harrow*, the Son of a neighbouring Farmer, who first taught her to own the Sway of that powerful Deity. She was not disagreeable in her Person, which was, however, of the largest Size, and her Features were regular ; and, had Miss not been a little given too much to Pride, she would have been a tolerable Companion for Life, for him or any other Farmer in *Yorkshire*. Young *Harrow* was as arch a *Tike* as any in the County, and was more enamoured, it was supposed, with the old Man's Bags than with his Daughter ; but old *Surly* was absolutely against his *Ursula's* disposing of herself ; and the Reason was, that he knew he must lug out his Purse upon the Occasion ; and that was a Reflection that included too much Horror for him to indulge. He used to declaim then greatly against Children's leaving their Parents for an Husband, and insisted upon it as a Duty incumbent on them to close their Eyes, before they entered into Wedlock. *Ursula*, however, little relished this Doctrine,

Doctrine, and was over the Head and Ears in Love, which occasioned much Bickering between her and her Father and Mother.

As I had made some Proficiency at Home, I was immediately put into the third Form, where they were reading *Virgil*; and, in about a Year's Time, I was foremost of the second Class, and began to relish the Elegancy of the politest and best *Roman* Authors; but, whilst I thus improved in my Learning, I grew in Condition as sleek and thin as a Running-Horse, from the Short-commons that were generally my Portion. We had about thirty Boarders; and our Mistress so managed Matters, that what would scarcely have kept Life and Soul together, in half that Number, sufficed us all.

She had an excellent Talent of making a great deal out of a little; and a small Quantity of Meat generally relished a tremendous Vase of Soup, or Broth, which had little other Relish than that of the Ingredients of the Root, or Herb Kind; and, as to our Bread and our Cheese, she contrived to have them so stale and hard, that our Jaws were tired, before we could satisfy our Hunger. My Case indeed was better than that of most of my Comrades, as my Father seldom let me want Money; and I had Presents frequently sent me by other Relations; but which, as I was swayed by great Generosity of Temper, I was pretty free in  
diffusing



diffusing the Benefits of to my particular Favourites. No Wonder if we laid the Orchards and Gardens of the Vicinity under frequent Contributions, as our boyish Love of Fruit was thus stimulated by Hunger; and indeed our Depredations were so notorious, that we were frequently found out, and our smarting Posteriors commonly paid for the Devastations we made. The Severity this Discipline was practised with, by our Master, raised a downright Hatred and Contempt in most of us towards him; but we made a Point of it never to complain to our Parents, being ashamed of such a Poverty of Spirit and Weakness; enduring the Smart without much Fear or Compunction, by a long Course of Habit. I, for my Part, being naturally of a high Mettle, and given much to Unluckiness and Waggy of all Sorts, soon became Chief, and Leader of the rest, in all our Pranks, and generally came off with the greatest Share of Punishment, which I bore with the Resolution of a *Martyr*; and had so often gone thro' a Course of Flogging, that my Breech was become perfectly hardened and callous. My Ambition, however, which exceeded all the rest of my Passions, made me very assiduous at my Book; so that, at the End of three Years, I became the Admiration of my Master himself, and the Envy of my School mates.

## C H A P. III.

*He robs his Master's favourite Pear-tree.— Is discovered, and severely scourged.— Sootbed by his Master and Mistress.— Resolves to be revenged.— Catastrophe of an extravagant Gentleman, whose Ghost haunts his Master's House.— He terrifies his Master and the Family.— Account of the Confusion they are in.*

**H**ITHERTO our Ravages had been carried on at some Distance from Home ; but our Master having a very fine Pear-tree in a Garden, which was kept under Lock and Key, I proposed to two or three of those Boys that formed our Council, that we should make an Attack upon those tempting Cates. I urged the Absurdity of keeping us from the Enjoyment of such a Banquet ; saying, as we were Part of his Family, we ought to have an unlimited Licence to rove at large in that Garden, as well as any other Part of his House ; intimating besides, that it was very hard that Mrs. *Presody* should make Money of those Pears, which she really did, when our Parents were told, when we first came, that all the Fruit about the Place was intended for our Use and Refreshment. My Arguments prevailed, and we set immediately to execute our Scheme. This  
Tree,

Tree, which bore several Bushels of Fruit, stood so close to the Wall, that several of its Branches projected over it; therefore I proposed they should hoist me up on their Shoulders, and wait below, whilst I gathered the Pears, and flung them into their Hats: No sooner said but done, and over I went; and was very busy in my Occupation, when I perceived, at some Distance, my Master weeding a Flower-Pot. As the whole Spot was thick set with Trees, he could not possibly discover me, tho', by the Elevation of my Situation, I had a full View of him. Being tempted, by such a lucky Opportunity, to gratify a little of that Resentment his Whippings had inspired, I took full Aim at him with a Pear, and happened to hit him just upon the Corner of his Hat, which immediately, with his Wig, fell off; and I was going to second my Blow, but, unfortunately for poor *Pill Garlick*, the Spring I gave myself snapped the Branch I stood upon, and down I came on the Inside of the Wall, bringing along with me, and the Ruins, whole Loads of this forbidden Fruit. The Noise roused the old Gentleman from the Contemplation of what had just happened, and he came upon me, before I could disentangle myself, and seized me, with the utmost Fury painted in his Face. In the first Motions of his Rage he felled me, with one Blow, at his Feet; and when I recovered, which was not for some Minutes, he dragged me  
by

by the Collar into the School-room, where binding me to his Desk, I underwent a more severe Flogging than ever was exercised upon a Wretch at the Cart's Tail. His Passion was too violent to admit him to utter any Expressions, and when he unbound me, which he did not till he was quite out of Breath, he left me, furiously crying, "There, *" I believe this will make you remember me,"* wallowing in the Blood that plentifully flowed from me upon the Floor. It was near two Hours before I was able to stand, and then I crept up to Bed in the utmost Agony and Torture; where I had not been long before his Wife came up, and, pretending to caution me against such Tricks for the future, administered some Unguent or other, which eased the Smart of my Back, which was before almost intolerable. After some Reflections upon my Roguery, she soothed me, (for indeed the old Man had imagined he had carried Matters too far, and sent her up for that Purpose) and told me, she would interceed with my Master to forgive me. Accordingly, in an Hour afterwards, *Profoddy* himself came into my Room, and, after some very severe Expostulations, told me he should pass by any further Correction for this Offence, and once more try if I would leave off such vicious Practices; and, so saying, put a small Piece of Money into my Hand, and bid me lie in Bed till next Day, where I had great Care taken of me. This was an unparalleled Piece  
of

of Generosity, considering his Temper ; but did not in the least extinguish my Desire and thorough Resolution to revenge myself upon him, the very first Opportunity.

Mr. *Profady's* House, which was an antique Gothic Structure, very large, and, by the Thickness and Strength of its Walls, an Instance of that Regard our Ancestors shewed to Posterity, even in their Buildings ; had many Years, according to the Report of the Country, been haunted by the Ghost of a young Gentleman, whose Mansion-house it had been, and who, after running out his Estate, had ended his Life and Extravagancies together, by shooting himself thro' the Head. A Murder generally, in these Parts, is the Forerunner of an Apparition, and there were not wanting many Witnesses to his having been seen over and over walking thro' the Garden at the Mid of Night, without his Head ; so far the credulous Country People had imposed upon themselves by their Superstition ; nay, a certain old Dame, who lived at two or three Fields Distance, frequently saw gleaming Lights throw the Windows, which with very great State progressively went from Room to Room, and then disappeared all on a sudden : 'Squire such an one, they would tell you very gravely, who lived in the House at such a Time, was obliged to remove, after having with his Family been scared out of his Wits, by uncommon Knockings and Unboltings.

Unboltings of the Windows and Doors, so that they could get no Rest or Quiet: Sometimes, to be sure, large Flames of Fire were seen to issue from Chimnies, which had conveyed no Smoke thro' them for many Years; and such dreadful Apprehensions these Stories had raised, that none of the Country Folks thereabout would come within a Furlong or two of the House, after Dark; *Farmer Barley* having had his Horse frightened so much, that he flung him over his Head, and *Gammer Wilson* had been by some *unseen Person* thrown into a Ditch, and hardly knew if she got Home on her Head or her Feet. Our Master, who was a great Enthusiast, did not pretend to disbelieve these Relations; but the low Rent, and the Commodiousness of the House for his Business, had induced him to defy *Satan* and all his Black-guard, and to become the Tenant, tho', many a Time and often, he and his Wife and Family had heard very strange Bustling in the Room where the Gentleman murdered himself, which, therefore, with three or four more of the most obnoxious, were constantly locked and bolted, and no one suffered to go into them. Whether the Apparition was pleased with this Civility or no I can't tell, but of late the Family had not been much disturbed, which raised a great Opinion of the Pedant's Sanctity in all the adjacent Villages. As to my Part, my Knowledge acquired from my Father, and the Method and Manner

of

of my bringing up, together with my natural Temper, defended me from Fear; but the rest of my Schoolfellows were under terrible Notions of this Spirit or Spirits which had committed such Havock. With the Assistance of this Apparition, I was resolved to retaliate my late Punishment on the Head of old *Profody*, and after having communicated my Scheme to my two principal Cronies, both about the same Age with myself, resolutely set about the Execution of it.

- We procured two Cats of the Boar Kind, and, having provided a Quantity of Old red Cloth, we sewed up a Couple of very antic Dresses for them, and then, cutting off their Claws, put Walnut Shells filled with Pitch upon their Feet: All this we had Opportunity to perform unobserved in a Garret which no-body ever entered, situated at the farthest Part of the House, and where we kept our Familiars confined till the Moment they were to come to Action. It was on a *Sunday* in the Evening, when the whole Family were congregated in a large Hall, and our Master was reading and expounding the Scriptures, that we, on various Pretences, left the Room, and went up into our Consultation-chamber; where having fixed our Instruments, and opened all the Chamber-doors we could come at, one of us discharged a small Pocket-pistol, at which Signal the Cats were set loose in all their grotesque Attire, with a sufficient Quantity of Pepper

per rubbed under their Tails ; and then we all ran down in a seeming Hurry and Precipitation, acquainting our Tyrant, that there were certainly strange Doings above Stairs, for that we could hear violent Stampings to and fro in every Room in the House. They were sufficiently alarmed before, at the Report of the Pistol, and presently heard a violent Stamping and Clattering in the Story over our Heads and the Entry. In short, the Cats, unused to such Confinement, frightened with the Noise of their own Feet, and at the same Time irritated with the Fire in their Tails, made a most hellish Uproar, and, flying from Place to Place with lamentable Cries and Squallings, one would have imagined the whole Militia of Hell had broken loose. The old Woman fell upon her Knees, Miss *Ursula* fainted away, and the Pedant, after pronouncing with great Emotion and Emphasis, *Lord have Mercy upon us!* followed the Example of his Wife : The terrible Screams of the Boys, the Barking of two or three Dogs, and a Quantity of Brimstone which I had flily thrown into the Fire, whilst in the Confusion my Comrades had beat out the Candles, presented such a Scene of Terror and Uproar, as can scarcely be described ; but how was it increased, when the two Spectres flew into the Kitchen, and after overturning a whole Tier of Pewter, and demolishing a Shelf of Crockery Ware, entered with wild Screams into the Hall ! and, one of them set-



ling for some Time on the Back of our Master, he just gave one hideous Groan, and fell prostrate without Sense on the Floor. Our Satisfaction was complete, when, by the unfavoury Smell that issued from all Parties, we could gather the violent Convulsions Fear had put them into; and, taking Advantage of the present Moment, we pinched old *Surly* with Pins, and tweaked him by the Ears, so that he roared out in a most lamentable Manner, ever and anon, crying, *Avant Satan!* In the Name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, what art! All this while we pretended also to be in the utmost Agony, and exclaimed louder than all the rest together, not forgetting, however, to seize our feline Accomplices in Time; which we did unperceived of any one, and, stripping them of their Habits, turned them out of Doors, flinging at the same Time a Quantity of large Crackers sily into the Fire, which made a loud Explosion, and shook the whole Room.

C H A P.

## C H A P. IV.

*Miss Urfula runs away with her Sweetheart.*

*—They examine the House.—The Daughter returns.—She discovers the Prank, and the Authors of it.—They are seized and confined.—Make their Escape.—He gets to his Father's with his Comrades.*

**Y**OUNG Farmer Harrow, whose Friendship we had gained, by carrying Letters and serving him in his Amour, having been informed of our Device, had furnished us with what Materials we were deficient in ; and, as the old Man had prohibited him the Sight of his Daughter for some Time, he thought this a good Opportunity to get her away from him, and therefore was waiting at some Distance to see the Event. It was a long Time before any one dared hold up his Head, but at length I cried out, with great Trepidation of Voice, I believe — they are gone— ; upon which the Pedagogue raising his Head up, and seeing the Coast clear, with a great many Exclamations of Lord have Mercy upon me ! what dreadful Appearances are these ! went to the Assistance of his Wife, who with some Difficulty was persuaded to arise. As to Miss *Urfula*, as soon as she recovered, she run out of Doors with the utmost Expedition, and was immediately accosted by her Paramour, to whom she fled for Succour ;

Succour ; who, after endeavouring to abate her Apprehensions, persuaded her to take Shelter at his Father's, and not return to a Spot which the *Devil* or some of his Imps had rendered so dreadful : She was soon persuaded to this, and so mounting behind him he rode off with her, not without her shewing the utmost Horror at the Sight of every Bush and Tree she passed in the Way. Various were the Judgments of all Parties upon the late Adventure. Mrs. *Profody*, who by the Way never had looked up, was certain she saw several very horrid Shapes, belching Flames out of their Mouths and Nostri's ; one of the Boys had seen a Thing as tall as the Room was long, all over covered with Brimstone and Fire ; as to our Master, he not in the least doubted that they were imported from the infernal Regions, and, to strengthen his Opinion, remarked the sulphureous Scent they had left behind them. It was a long Time before they were somewhat composed, and then we went in Procession, each striving to be last, to inspect the Rooms over Head ; and diverse Comments were made upon every Thing there, particularly at the Doors being all flung wide open, which, Mr. *Profody* well observed, was not very necessary to such aerial Beings, seeing the Key-hole might as well have served for their Passage ; he complained greatly at their personal ill Usage of him, and his Imagination had magnified the Pricking of Pins into the fixing Claws and Talons into  
all

all Parts of his Body. His Daughter's Absence, who could not be found high nor low, gave him great Apprehensions, and he was fearful, as he had not observed when she withdrew, that they had taken her away when they had vanished; which he conjectured must be, when the dreadful Peal of Thunder, as he called it, growled in his Ears. He concluded his Discourse with repeating in a mournful Tone, accompanied with a profound Sigh, those Lines of *Milton* :

*Spirits, in whatsoever Shape they chuse,  
Dilated or condense, bright or obscure,  
Can execute their airy Purposes,  
And Works of Love or Enmity produce !*

He gave all, moreover, a strict Charge not to divulge the Occurrence to any of the Neighbours, fearing, may hap, that it might be prejudicial to his Interest with the Parents of his Boarders.

As to myself and my Fellow-conspirators, we got a-part, as soon as we could, and then gave Vent to our Mirth, and applauded each other for the Conduct we had shewn in the Execution of our Project, and bound one another by solemn Promises to the Keeping of the Secret.

The next Morning my Master was released from one Part of his Anxiety by the Arrival of old Mr. Harrow, who came to let him know that his Daugh-

ter was married to his Son, and, to make the Matter easy, which he found less difficult, as the Father was much mortified and crest-fallen at what had happened the Night before ; and the new married Couple were introduced and pardoned immediately ; but, as the Bridegroom had very injudiciously trusted the Secret to his Wife the Night before, she, like a true Woman, was too big with it, and too much mortified to see her Father and Mother with herself so much duped by three Stripplings, to conceal it long, and that very Evening betrayed the whole Affair. Words can't express the Rage of the old Pedagogue ; like a furious Mastiff, who, in the midst of an hungry Fit, has been robbed of his favourite Bone by some puny whiffling Cur, and seizes him by the Neck, and worries and tears him without Mercy, deaf to all the Yelpings and Moans he makes ; so seizing us all three, he hauled us, in the utmost Consternation, into the School-room, where he locked us in, telling us with great Fierceness, he would return to us soon, when he had thought of a Punishment severe enough for our Demerits. As soon as we had recovered ourselves a little from our Surprise and Dismay, we began to consult how we should avoid the impending Storm that threatened us ; and, at last, came all to a Resolution to endeavour an Escape, and return to our Fathers, and let them honestly into the whole of the Affair, and trust to their Mercy ; as  
we

we had numberless Allegations against our Master and Mistress, which would counterbalance their Accusations. We had all exhausted the Measure of Instruction and Learning he had the Capacity to bestow on us, and as we apprehended we had not thrown away their Money, or our Time, it gave us the utmost Confidence of getting well over the Matter.

The School-room was one Story high, and underneath one of the back Windows was an Out-house, that served for a Brew-house, which was quite close to the Wall, and but a small Descent from the Window: This we pitched upon as the readiest Way to get from Durance, as we could drop from the Window upon the Tiling, and from thence, for Lads of our Agility, it was but a moderate Jump to the Ground. The Names of my two Fellow-sufferers were *Jack Sharpley* and *Tom Archer*, both pretty near my own Age; and the former was the first to try the Experiment, which we could not delay a Moment, for already an Hour and an Half had been spent in the foregoing Deliberations. He made his Essay, and got down very successfully, and so did *Tom Archer*; but I, not practising the same Sleight, or being heavier, broke the Tiling, and fell through the Rasters into the Brew-house. I was almost stunned by the Fall; but recovered myself in a few Minutes, and, examining the Doon, found it, to my great Terror, locked fast, so that I was fairly caught in *Lob's Pound*: I could see no Way to deliver my-

self from this unexpected Prison, and, whilst I was ruminating, heard the Key turn in the Door, on which I hid myself behind a large Back, trembling and shaking with Apprehension from Head to Foot. As soon as the Door opened, I saw it was my Master that entered, who, perceiving the Damage done overhead, for he had not heard the Noise I made in my Fall, immediately guessed at the Case, and cried to himself: "O ho! my Gentle-  
" men were making their Escape I find; but I dare  
" say one of them has fallen into this Trap, if not  
" all the Three." And then, calling to his Wife, he bid her send one of the Boys with a Light, for the farther Part of the Place was very dark. I cannot say I ever was in a more doleful Situation in my Life, and was so confused with Dread and Fear, that not one Scheme presented itself for my Deliverance, and I thought I must infallibly fall a Prey to this fierce Enemy. The Candle came, and he bid the Boy place a Stool, on which he got up, first to inspect a large Copper, which was almost underneath the Fracture I had made in the Ceiling, but which luckily I had escaped falling into: As he was somewhat purblind, he stooped over, that he might have the more commodious View, and to reach farther stood on one Leg: Now, says I to myself, is the Time to escape or never, and, running swiftly from my Hiding-place, took hold of his supporting Leg, and at one Heaving tossed him  
Head

Head foremost into the Copper, which, by the Report of his Fall, seemed not to be quite void of Water ; then at one Bound sprung through the Door-way, and without one reverted Look, swift as a frightened Hare before the pursuing greedy Hounds, I gained the Bottom of the Garden, and soon measured the adjacent Meadow, where I found my two Associates, who were trembling and apprehensive for my Safety. They could scarce believe their Eyes ; but it was no Time to talk, and, hallooing to them to follow me, we neither stopped nor paused till we got near two Miles from the Territories of our Persecutor : We then abated our Speed, and heartily congratulated one another, that we had thus saved our Bacon, and disappointed the Vengeance of this cruel Pedagogue. Upon examining our Stock of Money, we found three or four Shillings amongst us all, which was more than sufficient to defray our Expences to my Father's, where, through my Persuasions, my Companions agreed to accompany me, before they went to their respective Homes, as their Parents both lived within five or six Miles of our House, and I had promised to engage him to become the Mediator with them for their Pardon. We arrived at about Six o'Clock in the following Evening in our Village ; but I did not chuse to enter my Father's abruptly, and therefore got Mr. *Salsa*, the Clerk, to go first to him, with an Account of our Arrival, and to beg Leave we might wait upon him, with a



Relation of the Reasons for our Elopement. *He* readily undertook the Task, having been always very fond of me, and, my Father not being at Home, imparted the News to my Mother, who eagerly ordered us to come to her ; which accordingly we performed, and I was received with the utmost Tendernefs and Affection, and my Companions, with great Civility, and were ordered to be refreshed before ſhe would hear our Story.

---

## C H A P. V.

*His Reception at Home with his Comrades.—They are reprov'd by his Father.—Several excellent Observations.—His Father, with thoſe of his Companions, pay a Viſit to Mr. Profody.—His Behaviour thereon.*

**A** Galley-ſlave that has been long chained to the Oar, and ſubjected to the remorseleſs Rage and cruel Stripes of his Overſeer, could not more rejoice at being reſtored to Freedom, than we did, at our Deliverance from the Brutality of our incenſed Maſter ; and my Mother, who indulged the utmoſt Fondneſs at my unexpected Arrival, not having ſeen me above once ſince I firſt went to School, undertook to break the Matter to my Father, and to make my Peace; when ſhe

she understood in what a Manner we had been  
 used, at which she expressed the utmost Indigna-  
 tion. He had been to pay a Visit to a neigh-  
 bouring Gentleman, and did not return till pretty  
 late, when my Mother let him into the Story,  
 which very much surprised him, and he desired her  
 to call us to him. I ran to him, as soon as I saw  
 him, and he very affectionately embraced me :  
 “ So Jerry ! So young Gentlemen ! I find you  
 “ have fled from Punishment ; let me have a sit-  
 “ cere and true Account of what has happened,  
 “ and by that I shall be able to judge whether I  
 “ shall entertain you, or send you back to your  
 “ Master.” I was Spokesman, and therefore re-  
 lated to him, which he never had any Idea of be-  
 fore, the tyrannical Behaviour, the terrible Sourg-  
 ings of Mr. *Prose*, and the Hardships we had  
 undergone from the miserable and covetous Tem-  
 per of him and his Wife ; the Story of the Pear-  
 tree, the Adventure of the Cats, and every Thing  
 else, without Disguise ; concluding, that, as I had  
 attained to every Thing that he was capable to teach  
 me, and had been far from neglecting my Book,  
 I hoped he would not so far mortify me, as to  
 send me there again ; but would either under-  
 take the further Care of me himself, or procure  
 me another Master, and intercede with the Pa-  
 rents of my Friends, to take them also into Fa-  
 vour. He was greatly incensed at the Treatment

we had met with, and could scarcely keep the Gravity of his Countenance, whilst I related the little Pranks we had played our Tutor ; but, constraining himself as much as possible, he gave us the following Lecture :

“ I am charmed, my Dear, that you have not  
“ mispent your School Hours, but have made such  
“ a Proficiency in the Languages, which indeed  
“ I have heard before from your Master himself,  
“ who was also tempted, young Gentlemen, to  
“ give me the same Account of you too, the last  
“ Time I was at his House ; which I communicated to your Fathers, and which gave them  
“ great Satisfaction. We had intended to take  
“ you away from thence, at the Expiration of  
“ the next Quarter, but you have anticipated our  
“ Design. I blame myself for not having more  
“ minutely enquired into Matters of such Importance, as the Temper and Disposition of a Person whom I entrusted with the Government of  
“ you, at such a critical Part of Life ; the right  
“ Management of such young Minds, at that  
“ Time, laying the Foundation of every future  
“ Good, or, on the contrary, every future Error and Misfortune ; I own, I was deceived  
“ in the Account I received, both of him and  
“ his Family, so falsely tender Persons are of  
“ giving a true Character of a Man in such an  
“ Employment. From my Knowledge of your  
“ natu-

“ natural Temper, I must imagine you would  
 “ never have been guilty of some Things you have  
 “ mentioned, had not the contemptible Beha-  
 “ viour of your Master, and the little Care he  
 “ took to form your Minds, which, by the bye,  
 “ is one principal Business of a Schoolmaster,  
 “ laid you open to such puerile Temptations as  
 “ lay in your Way. If I forgive you, and re-  
 “ ceive you into Favour, it is on this Condition,  
 “ that you are sorry for any Disregard, though  
 “ ever so trifling, you have paid to other People’s  
 “ Property, and the low and base Principles of  
 “ Revenge, which, indeed, your Master set you  
 “ an Example of, that you have indulged ; though  
 “ now they may be imputed to boyish Inattention  
 “ and Folly, if not checked, they may grow too  
 “ strong for all the good Sense you may ever be  
 “ Masters of to eradicate. You, Sir, for the fu-  
 “ ture Part of your Education, shall be indebted  
 “ to my Care ; I begin to see the Folly of public  
 “ Schools, merely because we can never be sure of  
 “ the good Qualities of those we confide you to :  
 “ As to you, young Gentlemen, you’ll stay with  
 “ Joe, till I have seen your Fathers, and reconciled  
 “ them to my Way of thinking.” When he had  
 thus finished this reasonable and tender Speech, he  
 took me in his Arms, and embraced me with great  
 Emotion, and also saluted my School-fellows ; and  
 then proceeded to examine us in the several Authors  
 we had read, and applauded us greatly for the ready

Knowledge we shewed in them, and the Taste we seemed to have for their Elegancies. I was now in my fourteenth Year, and, without Vanity, may say, that Nature had stamped on my Soul the most virtuous and generous Affections; no Wonder, then, if the kind Reception I met with at Home, and the reasonable and prudent Manner of my Treatment, gave me the highest Sentiments of Respect and Veneration for this good Father; a contrary Treatment, and sending me back again, would have had the worst Effects, upon such a Temper, which Argument and Persuasion will work upon, with proper Force, but Sourness, Ill-nature, and Harshness, drive to the last Extremities: The more Boys are used like rational, thinking Creatures, the more they are applied to by gentle Methods, the better they behave; and the contrary Manners, I am persuaded, are the Cause of much of that Degeneracy, we every Day have: such melancholy Proofs of, in the rising Generation. By being thus treated, they learn a Habit of reasoning, and so strongly imbibe it, that they practise it all their Lives after; and let the Sallies of their boiling Passions carry them to ever such extravagant Lengths, you fix a Monitor in their Breasts, which sooner or later draws them off from, and corrects their wild Pursuits.

My Father waited, the next Day, on Mr. *Sharp-ley*, and Mr. *Archer*, who, as they were both Men  
of

of good Sense, easily came into his Notions, and agreed to take their Sons away from *Profody*, determining to send them to another School at *York*; but, as my Father recollected there were no proper Companions for me in his Neighbourhood, he generously told them he would undertake the further Care of them, together with me, at which they were highly delighted; and returned him many Acknowledgments; and, as they were all somewhat in Arrear with *Profody*, they agreed to ride over together to his House, and finally discharge their Obligations to him.

When they arrived there, the old Pedant, not knowing we had been before-hand with him, told so many Falshoods of us, and inveighed against us with so much apparent Malice and Resentment, that, if they had not been prepossessed against him before, it would have given them the same Ideas we had laboured to inspire them with. They made little Reply to what he said, and when he came to understand their Errand, and that we had got Home, he was quite Thunder-struck, and began to soften his Manner of Expression, laying the Tricks we had been guilty of upon Levity and Puerility, which before he had ascribed to a natural Turpitude and Wickedness of Heart; but his Attempts to reclaim us were all in vain, and they parted with him, leaving him in the highest Disgust and ill Humour, which was sensibly increased by a very

grave Lecture which was read him by my Father, upon the right Conduct of the Office of a School-master, and the Baseness of Avarice and Revenge. A Servant that attended them brought us our Books, and what wearing Apparel we had left behind us in our precipitate Retreat.

---

## C H A P. VI.

*His Father's Manner of Education.—Sharp-  
ley is sent to Sea, and Archer to Oporto.—Pro-  
per Reflections.—Takes great Delight in  
Hunting, and gains the Friendship of Sir  
Walter Rich, by a generous Action.—His  
Father determines to send him to London.*

AFTER we had been indulged some Days in such Amusements as were suitable to our Years, my Father applied himself to the further Cultivation of our Understandings. We had all made pretty near the same Progress, and were, at so green an Age, tolerable Masters of *Greek* and *Latin*. And, as we were intended for the World, he endeavoured to give us the most strong Ideas of Religion and Morality; which, being conveyed in the most captivating Manner to our Minds, sunk deep into our Souls; and were the more strengthened by the excellent Pattern we saw daily before

us,

us, in my Father and Mother, who used my Companions as well as myself, like their own Children. We soon became Proficients in the most useful Branches of the Mathematics; and Natural Philosophy was rendered so entertaining to us, and discovered such a Field of Wonders, that we forgot all our trifling Sports, and that alone constituted the Employment of our leisure Hours. He taught us the *French* Language, which is so generally spoken all over the World; and, my Mother talking it very well, we conversed hardly in any other Tongue. To preserve our Healths we were permitted to have a Fencing-Master twice a Week, who also was directed to form us to a polite Address, without making Dancing so important a Part of Education, as it generally seems to be reckoned. We had the Happiness to make great Improvement in every Thing we were put to; and, my Father, forsaking almost all other Company, became our constant Companion; and his honied Precepts met with such eager Attention, that we became the Wonder, and, at the same Time, the Delight of the adjacent Country. Happy Period of Life! when the boiling Passions, the Attendants of Human Nature, are kept under the Restraints of Reason and Authority; when Care and Anxiety is never tasted, and the genuine Cheerfulness of the Heart is undepressed by the hurrying Toils and torturing Vicissitudes of Life. With  
what



### 38. *The Life and Adventures*

what Regret I look back and survey the engaging Scenes which Riches and Splendor can never recompense the Loss of ! Ye Hours of golden Instruction ! ye Moments of pure Content, and untainted Pleasure ! how dearly ought we to prize you ! and how little are we acquainted with your true Value and Estimation ! Hurrying into the tempestuous Ocean of busy, advancing Years, we soon are lost to your ineffable Sweetness ; the Mind grows foul and muddy with Crosses and Vexations ; and over-bearing Folly, and growing Vices, turmoil the rest of our mortal Pilgrimage. Well has Providence allotted a few Years of Youth and Innocence to our Share : Had we been doomed to survey and feel, at once, the Load of Ills we are born to, without this blissful Pause of Misfortune and Anguish, who could support the shocking State of Existence ? And yet, how wisely Providence does stimulate and excite us to launch out into maturer Action, and all the fancied Joys, and real Sorrows, that at every advancing Step surround us ; but by the Instability and Vanity of the former, and the constant Attendance of the latter, spur us still to explore new Regions of exstatic Calm, and eternal Content, which it has reserved for those who worthily attain to the Period of their Race, the Goal of their Pursuits.

We had passed near two Years in this Situation, at my Father's, when Mr. Sharples, who had  
other

other Children, and but a small Estate, determined to send his Son to Sea, under a Brother who commanded a Man of War, and accordingly procured him the King's Letter; and, to rob me of both my dear Companions, Mr. *Archer*, about the same Time, sent his Son to *Operta*, to a distant Relation, who was a considerable Merchant there, to be placed in his Counting-house. As we had lived in the greatest Harmony, we could not part without the highest Tokens of Sorrow, and took our Leave of each other, after Protestations of eternal Friendship, and Resolutions of renewing our Familiarity, whenever it should be in our Power. My Father and Mother were affected with the Loss of them, and he could not be prevailed on to accept of the least Consideration for the agreeable Pains he had bestowed upon them: the Fruits of which were very visible in their Conversation and Behaviour, and gave the utmost Satisfaction to their Parents. To shew their Gratitude, they begged my Father to let me spend some Months at their House, which they desired so pressing, that he could not refuse them: and accordingly I went Home with them, both living in the same Part of the Country, between five and six Miles from our House. I was now in my sixteenth Year, and was flattered with the Appellation of a polite and intelligent young Gentleman; my Stature was superior to most of my Age, and Nature had be-  
stowed

flowed on me a great Share of Health and Spirits, and a very agreeable Person ; so that my Company was very much prized by the Fathers of my Friends, and I made one in all their Parties of Hunting, of which they were both very fond, and became a very keen sportsman, despising every Danger and Difficulty in the Chace ; by which I acquired the Applause of a Baronet, whose Seat was in that Neighbourhood, who had the highest Regard for Talents of that Sort, and thought no Man worth a Rush that could not surmount every Obstacle in Pursuit of the Fox or the Hare. He had a very large Estate, which, as he was a Widower, and shewed no Inclination to a second Marriage, must of course descend to an only Daughter, then in the thirteenth Year of her Age ; so that Miss *Louisa Rich* was reckoned the richest Heiress in all those Parts. Sir *Walter* was one of those *Roman Catholic* Gentry, who are contented to receive their Opinions, because their Fathers had possessed them before ; but was far from indulging a persecuting Spirit, or Maxims destructive of the Constitution ; and was, in general, much esteemed by his Neighbours, and loved by his Tenants of every Persuasion.

This Gentleman was never easy when I was not with him, and expressed, on every Occasion, the greatest Regard for me ; introduced me to his Daughter, and to a Nephew, who lived with him, about

about my own Age, and who was said, by most People, to be intended as an Husband for Miss, by her Father. If I was charmed with the Conversation of this innocent young Lady, who already discovered the Beauties of an angelic Mind, in a lovely Person, I was no less disgusted with the surly, brutal Behaviour of her Cousin, who was a mere country Booby. I enjoyed my Time in this friendly Excursion, very deliciously ; and every now and then went over, and paid a Visit at Home, the Tenderness of my Mother scarce brooking such an Absence from her without it.

We were pretty late engaged in a Conversation one Evening at Mr. *Archer's*, when a Servant came in, with the melancholy Tidings, that Sir *Walter's* House was on Fire ; which alarmed the Company, and immediately put an End to our Argument ; and we ran, with great Haste, to see if our Assistance might be of any Service, in such a dreadful Calamity. The lower Part of the Building was enveloped in Flames, which were ascending very swiftly, and spreading with dreadful Fury ; Sir *Walter* was lying on the Ground, having sprained his Foot, by jumping from his Chamber-window ; and the distracted Domestic's were busy in removing such Goods as their Surprise would permit them to take away at the first Alarm : But the most shocking Sight of all was, the young Lady calling out of the Window of her Apartment for Assistance, in  
the

the utmost Distraction, having only a loose Gown cast over her. Her Father was unable to move; the Clodpates about him were too fearful, or stupid, to adventure to her Relief; and the Nephew had secured himself in an adjoining Alehouse, where he was drinking with some country Folks, and telling them with what Difficulty he escaped the Flames. In this Confusion the poor young Lady would, no doubt, have undergone the Fate of the Building, had not Mr. *Archer*, and myself, thought of a long Ladder, which stood at a Farmer's hard by, which with some Assistance, we reared against the Side of the House: This no sooner was done, than I mounted valiantly up it, having totally forgot my own Safety, in the Contemplation of Miss's Danger. After being somewhat scorched in my Ascent, I gained the Window, and directly jumped in, when immediately taking her in my Arms, and charging her to hold fast, I resolutely descended the Way I came up, and delivered her into the Hands of her Father, where she immediately fainted away; and the Hurry of my Spirits, and the Fright I had undergone, so weakened me, that I also fell down senseless at his Feet. I soon recovered myself, and, after drinking a Cordial, which was brought me, enquired how my Charge did; and was answered, That she was carried away, very ill, to Mr. *Sharpley's*. The Baronet took me into his Arms, called me his Preserver and Saviour, and

and vowed he would never forget my Bravery, the longest Day he had to live : In short, I received such a Profusion of Compliments on every Side, that I could not conceal my Blushes. I went afterwards to pay a Visit to Miss, and found her better ; and, tho' my Heart was too young ever to have known or felt the soft Impressions of Love, I perceived a wonderful Satisfaction in her Thanks, and thought myself happy in having thus rendered her this trifling Service. The House was reduced to Ashes ; and we understood the Fire had been occasioned by the Carelessness of a drunken Cook, who went to sleep with a Candle burning upon the Dresser ; which, unhappily having caught hold of some Linen, had spread the Flames, before the Family had been alarmed, or any Help could be procured. After this Accident, the Attachment of Sir *Walter* to me, and the Civilities I received from his Daughter, were unbounded ; he studied, on every Occasion, to shew me the utmost Respect, and was scarce ever a Minute easy, unless I made one of his Company ; directing Miss, in Token of Gratitude, to insist upon my accepting a Diamond Ring, which she took off her own Finger, to place upon mine. I could not refuse so genteel and so valuable a Present, which, in an involuntary Rapture, which I then was far from understanding the Motives of, I solemnly vowed never to part with.

In two Months after this Incident, I received Orders from my Father to return Home; and he told me in the Letter, that he had determined to send me to *London*, if it was not contrary to my Inclinations; and wanted to talk with me about it. I took Leave of all my Friends, after returning Thanks for the great Honours and Civilities I had received; and was accompanied by Mr. *Archer* to my Father's.

---

## C H A P. VII.

*Excellent Discourse of his Father to him.—He receives Letters from Sharpley and Archer.—Sets out with his Father and Mother for London.—Arrives there.—Reflections on the first Views of that Place.—He is bound Apprentice to Mr. Diaper, a Wholesale Linnen-draper.*

WHEN our kind Visitor was gone, and the first two or three Days after my Arrival were passed, my Father took me with him into the Garden, and then unbofomed himself to me in the following Manner: “ I sent for you, my dear Son, to hear a Scheme I have to propose for your Welfare, as you are now arrived at an Age, in which we should begin to consider of some Profession or Employment, that may make  
“ you

“ you happy, and a Benefit to the Community.  
 “ You may perceive, by my not having sent you  
 “ to the University, that I did not intend you for  
 “ the Church : No, my Dear, believe me, the  
 “ Discouragements that attend the sacred Order,  
 “ and the general Contempt, which many of them  
 “ have given too much Ground for, that they la-  
 “ bour under, are a sufficient Bar to any such De-  
 “ sign.. Your Disposition might induce me to  
 “ prefer the Army to any other Designation ;  
 “ but without Friends in Power, or an inde-  
 “ pendent Fortune, the greatest Merit makes a  
 “ very poor Figure in Scarlet, and affords very  
 “ little Happiness to a Family, if ever a Man’s  
 “ softer Moments should render Married desirable.  
 “ The Law I cannot approve, as it is now circum-  
 “ stanced, and as the generality of the Practitioners  
 “ carry it on ; and as to Physic, I think it labours  
 “ under the same, or greater Disadvantages, than  
 “ either. As you know me to be a great Friend  
 “ to my Country, and willing, as much as I can,  
 “ that you should become as useful as possible to  
 “ it, you will not be surprised that I have the ut-  
 “ most Veneration for Merchants and Traders,  
 “ who diffuse the Blessings of Commerce and Traf-  
 “ fic to every Individual, and are the Upholders  
 “ and Supports of the Interest and Independency  
 “ of this Nation. In all the other Callings I have  
 “ mentioned, there is a Degree of Servility and  
 “ Mean-



“ Means, necessary to a Man who would be  
 “ eminent, that I, by no Means, would make ne-  
 “ cessary to you. By Trade, you will preserve a  
 “ generous Independency, if you act wisely and  
 “ prudently; and will become a useful and va-  
 “ luable Member of the Commonwealth, and an  
 “ Advantage to your Friends and Relations; you  
 “ will be enabled to provide for your Family with  
 “ Honour, and in a Manner suitable to that laud-  
 “ ble Ambition and Tenderness that ought to  
 “ inspire the Breast of a Husband and a Father:  
 “ I am not going to propose a Branch of Trade  
 “ that shall disgrace your Endowments, but one  
 “ wherein you may preserve the Gentleman in the  
 “ Man of Business. You know, your Mother  
 “ has a distant Relation in *London*, Mr. *Diaper*,  
 “ the Wholesale Linnen-draper, who is a Man of  
 “ great Honour, strict Integrity, and a large For-  
 “ tune, which he has principally raised by Industry  
 “ and Diligence in his Business. ’Tis to him, if  
 “ you are not averse, for I would never force your  
 “ Inclinations; fancy what you will, that I would  
 “ put you Apprentice; and therefore consider  
 “ by To-morrow, that I may write him Word of  
 “ my Resolution; for he was, here some Days  
 “ since, on his Return from a Journey into *Sal-*  
 “ *land*, and I made him the Offer of you, at  
 “ which he was very well pleased.” I returned  
 him my most grateful Thanks, told him I had a

Hint of it before from my Mother, and that, as well from the View of the Advantages of such a Destination, as from a Knowledge that it was agreeable to his Sentiments, I very readily obeyed him, in giving my Assent to go to Mr. *Diaper*. He was entirely satisfied to find me so ready to close with him in it; and wrote to that Gentleman, that he would set out with me in a Fortnight's Time. Mr. *Sharpley* paid me a Visit the next Day, and brought me two Letters, one from his Son, and another from young Mr. *Archer*, which came each in a Packet to their Father's. *Sharpley's* was to this Effect:

*Lee, off Cape Henry, Virginia, July 7, 1712.*

*My dear Friend,*

I Should be inexcusable, if, whilst I was writing to *England*, I did not think of testifying thus, That you are ever in my Mind, and that the Friendship we so early contracted is rather stronger now, than when I had the Pleasure to be so near you. All the Difficulties and Dangers of a long and tedious Voyage, nor a Variety of new Objects, have been able to banish my Regret at our Separation. I hope you are in Health, and my worthy Tutor, and your, I was going to say mine, dear Mother, Pray, my dear *Joey*, let me hear from you every Opportunity, and believe me to be

*Your most affectionate and sincere Friend,*

JOHN SHARPLEY.]

*The*

*The other was to this Purport.*

*Oporto, August 20, 1712.*

*Dearest JOE,*

**I** Take the first Opportunity I have to convince you that I am still as much actuated by Friendship, as ever I was, and that I shall ever retain the most lively Respect and Value for a Person, who, for my Life, I can look upon in no other Light than that of a Brother. I hope you have heard before now from *Sharpley*, who I understood was bound to *Virginia*, where he is likely to have a long Station. My Duty attends your dear Father and Mother ; pray let them know I have not forgot, nor ever shall, their Goodness and Benevolence to me. I am well, and can already express myself in the *Portuguese* Language, well enough to be understood in common Matters. I am immersed in a great deal of Business, but shall always, I hope, find Time to prove myself,

*Dear JOE,*

*Your affectionate,*

*and faithful Friend*

THOMAS ARCHER.

Words will too faintly express the Warmth and Zeal of Friendship that these Letters inspired ; for, indeed, my Affection was rather increased, than diminished, by our Separation ; and as they were  
to

to send a Packet to *London*, to be forwarded both to *Virginia* and *Portugal*, the next Day, I immediately wrote Answers to them.

The Fortnight was expired, when my Father and Mother being determined to go to *London* with me; and accordingly, after I had taken my Leave of all my Friends and Acquaintance, particularly of Sir *Walter* and his amiable Daughter, who both expressed great Concern at losing my Company, we set out, and arrived at that great Metropolis, after a very easy and pleasant Journey, which, as my Father called on several Friends in the Road, and endeavoured to make the Travelling as agreeable as possible to my Mother and me, by shewing us every Thing remarkable in our Way, took us up near a Fortnight.

If I was surpris'd at the great Number of Carriages of all Sorts, and the Multitude of Travellers and Passengers that crouded the Roads, as we approached near *London*, how was I astonish'd at the prodigious Concourse of People I discovered at my Entrance into Town? All the Ideas I had formed from my Knowledge of *York*, and other Places in the Country, came far short of what I beheld. My Wonder increas'd in Proportion as I advanced into the Heart of the City, and survey'd the busy Herds that throng'd continually through every Street and Avenue, all with the Marks of Business and Attention painted in their Faces. The Sight gave me

me a strong Notion of the laudable Importance of Trade; which thus directs and obliges every one in his Station to be ever vigilant, ever studious to employ his Time, in somewhat or other, tending to the Service of Individuals, and consequently beneficial to the Community in general. I could see no such absent, unmeaning Visages as the Country is filled with, and began to entertain a very contemptible Opinion of a Life of Idleness, Sports and Pleasures, where Self is the Object that engrosses all our Cares and all our Sollicitudes: Not so the industrious Citizen, whose Endeavours to benefit himself necessarily produce Employment for, and conduce to the Emolument of Artificers in every Branch of Work, and he may be said to be one of those who contribute to the Support of Millions. Such Reflections as these still encouraged me in the Resolutions I had taken of becoming one of this useful Body of People.

Mr. *Diaper*, being a distant Relation of my Mother's, had insisted on their making Use of the Convenience of his House, during their Stay in Town; so that this was the Place we went first to, where himself and his whole Family vied with each other in the Civility of our Reception.

My Father, before the Business he came upon was concluded, carried us to all the public Places, and shewed us every Thing remarkable in and about *London*; for he told me, he could not bear to  
leave

leave the Edge of my Curiosity too keen, lest I might fall into improper Company, in Pursuit of my gratifying myself with the Sight of these Novelties, after his Departure, and thereby neglect my Business.

Every Thing being agreed upon between my Parents and my Master, as I must now begin to call him, I was bound Apprentice at ——— Hall, of which Company he was a Liveryman, my Father paying him a Consideration of Three hundred Pounds with me; and soon after, as he had now been absent five Weeks from Home, resolved to return; but first agreed with a Friend of his to remit to him thirty Pounds every Year for my Use, which I was to consider as Pocket-money, that, as my dear Father and Mother said, I might be above Temptation to any mean or dishonest Action: To this Friend he also recommended me very strongly for his Advice and Instructions in any Thing that might occur, during my Apprenticeship; and, after bestowing upon me a Number of excellent Rules and Lessons for my better Conduct in this ticklish Part of Life, and giving me their cordial Blessing, they set out for *Yorkshire*, leaving me in a tenderly mournful Situation; which, as it was the first, so it was one of the sincerest Grievs I ever felt in my Life.

## C H A P. VIII.

*Character of Mr. Diaper, his Wife, and Son.  
 —Very assiduous in his Business.—Contracts  
 a Friendship with young Diaper.—Gains the  
 Esteem of his Master.—Manner of spending  
 their vacant Hours.—Reflections on Trade  
 and Commerce.*

AS soon as I was initiated into the Method of our Business, I was resolved not to be an unprofitable Servant, and applied myself with the utmost Attention to make myself Master of what I imagined must be my future Dependence ; and I found all the kind Instruction from Mr. *Diaper*, that I was taught to expect. He was turned of forty Years of Age, and having been in Trade all his Life, succeeding his Father in the same Set of Customers, he had, by a thorough Indefatigability, Application, and Industry, got, as it is expressed by the Citizens, *the Fore-horse by the Head* ; and not only so, but, exclusive of his Business and ready Money, was possessed of a pretty Estate in Right of his Wife. His Table was plentifully, not luxuriously or extravagantly supplied, and a Friend was sure of always finding a Welcome there. His Oeconomy in the Expences of his Family was remarkable ; but bordered not in the least on that Species  
of

of Parsimony, which, however Praise-worthy, is never agreeable to Servants. His Temper was mild and sociable, and his Understanding clear and strong; to his Superiors he behaved with a respectful Regard; to his Equals with a generous and manly Freedom; to his Inferiors and Servants with Humanity, Consideration, and Good-nature: His Uprightness, Integrity, and Honour in his Dealings, gained him the Confidence of every body he dealt with, and the good Sense and Knowledge he was endowed with, rendered him a desirable and improving Companion. Mrs. *Diaper* was a Woman of Virtue, Prudence, and Capacity, and the utmost Harmony was visible in their Behaviour to each other; nor was his Value lessened, but rather increased by a bad and declining State of Health, which obliged her to be pretty much at their Country-house, where himself generally spent half the Week. They had only one Child, who had now served three Years of his Apprenticeship to his Father, and on whom, as he was a sober, faithful, and careful Youth, the Weight of the Business was devolved, tho' at the early Age of Nineteen. Notwithstanding this young Gentleman had been early familiarised to the Management of such important Concerns, he had made a very pretty Advance in Letters, and, having read and digested some of the best Authors, he surpassed, in the Faculties of his Mind, most of his Age. Tho' he had none of the



irregular Flights and Sallies of Youth, and his whole Soul seemed to be bent to the Exercise of the necessary Duties of his Business, in which he was very expert ; yet he was quite polite and agreeable in his Conversation, nor did the orderly Management of his Conduct take off from the Taste of innocent and laudable Amusements, which he was a great Friend to. His honest, undesigning, and generous Heart was capable of a warm and disinterested Friendship, and his Behaviour and Address made him the Desire and Delight of every Company. My Education and Manner of Thinking made this worthy Family very pleasing to me, and I had all the Reason in the World to be satisfied with my Situation. My Master treated me like another Son, and the young Gentleman and myself, becoming Bed-fellows, entered into strict Friendship; which was increased daily by a Conformity of Sentiments and Actions :

*'Twas Sympathy of honest Minds :*

*Like Strings wound up in Music,*

*Where, at one Touch, both utter the same Harmony.*

In our Business we went Hand in Hand ; he ever studied therein to make his Superiority easy to me, and I to make my Respect and Diligence agreeable to him. In our Diversions, we were constant Associates, and, in short, a more suitable Pair

Pair were never directed to set out in Life together.

Our Dealings, which were very extensive, were carried on in a truly mercantile Manner, and, Mr. *Diaper* having a very faithful Journeyman, his Son, and myself were principally employed in the Compting-house. However, as my whole Study was to please my Master, I pretended to no Exemption from any Pains or Labour in the other Parts of his Affairs, being thoroughly sensible that every Thing, that tended to the Promotion of his Interest or Advantage, ought to be considered by me as my Duty, in the Station I was at present placed in. Therefore I never waited to receive Orders or Instructions, when any Thing was on the Carpet that required my Assistance; but studied, in every Thing, to be beforehand with either his Desires or Expectations. By this Method of acting, and preserving an obliging and even Deportment to every body in the Family, I procured so much the Esteem and Confidence of my Master, that he was extraordinarily ready to impart to me every Secret of his Traffic and Concerns; to push me forward in the Acquirement of my Occupation, and, in any Point of Indulgence, even prevented my Wishes. When the Hurry of the Day was over, we spent the Evening at Home, in Conversation or Reading, and now and then had a select Company of Friends with us; or else we sought out some Amusement

abroad; that would at the same Time divert and improve us; and in all Things young Mr. *Diaper* and myself were inseparable.

At the Close of the Week, we generally rode down to my Master's House in the Country, and staid till *Monday* Morning, where Mrs. *Diaper* made no Manner of Distinction between us, and on every Occasion expressed her Liking to me, and her Approbation of the strict Union between myself and her Son. My Master kept a Coach and Pair, and a Brace of Geldings, one of which was always at my Service; so that I experienced very little Difference between my happy Servitude and the Indulgences I had been used to receive from my Father and Mother at Home.

Our various Correspondences and large Dealings still opened more clearly the Importance and Dignity of Trade to me, which not only bound together, and so mutually united the Interests of Mankind, as to Individuals; but became the Cement between Country and Country, and introduced a Dependence upon the Principles of Honour, Justice, Uprightness, and Punctuality, all over the World; those Principles being the very Foundation of such an Intercourse, and without which no Man can possibly carry on a Correspondence in any Kind of Traffic. All wise Princes, who have had the Good of their Subjects at Heart, have constantly nourished and given the greatest Encouragement

to

to the Arts of Commerce ; they have not only considered them, as they were sure Means to increase the Riches of their Subjects and their own Revenues, but as they made their People wiser and better, and consequently more worthy of and faithful to their Governors. An idle and debauched People will ever be the Aversion and the Plague of a discerning, and generous, and good Prince.

I passed in this Manner the first two Years of my Time with much Satisfaction and Improvement to myself, and engaged the Kindness and Applause of my Master (who took Opportunities to give my Father and Mother great Pleasure in the Knowledge of my Behaviour) the Love of my Friend, and the Respect of my Fellow-servants. Happy should I have been, if the succeeding Years of my Life had all been passed over with the same Innocence, Virtue, and Prudence, which would have secured me from the Miseries and Distresses I afterwards suffered.

## C H A P. IX.

*He is surprised by the Carriage of a Maid-Servant.—Her extraordinary Affiduity to oblige him.—She betrays her Love for him.—His Efforts to cure her.—He is seduced by her.—His Uneasiness thereon.—She becomes troublesome to him, and jealous.—Cautions to Youth.—He grows cold to his Friend.—Seeks Company.—Becomes acquainted with Prim the Mercer, and Prig the Attorney.*

**T**HUS happily I spent my Time, practising all the excellent Precepts of my Father, and never deviating from the Principles of Virtue and Honour ; easy and content, caressed and esteemed by every body. I generally wrote once a Month to my Father or Mother, and had with great Pleasure kept up a Correspondence with my two old Friends, *Sharpley* and *Archer*, the former of whom, I understood by the last Letter I received, had been rated already as a Midshipman by his Uncle.

At our Townhouse, Mr. *Diaper* kept two Maid-Servants, one of whom was a young Girl, the Daughter of a Farmer in *Cambridgeshire*, who was an agreeable Creature, and possessed a good Share of Spirit and Vivacity. The Light I was considered in by the Family, made the Servants very assidu-

ous

ous in doing every Thing they imagined would oblige me ; but I had perceived, for a considerable Time, that this young Woman was more studious than ordinary, in doing such little Matters for me as were necessary to one in my Station : I had therefore been very generous to her on several Occasions, to reward her for her obliging Temper, not apprehending it to be from any other Motive than that of her natural Inclination, and from a Sense of the Good-nature I always shewed to the inferior Servants ; but I was soon forced to change my Way of Thinking. I had frequently caught her gazing at me with more than ordinary Earnestness, and, if I happened to look suddenly that Way, she would cast her Eyes downward, blush, and I heard a Sigh now and then escape her ; if I went into my Chamber on any Occasion, I generally found her sitting there, whence she would retire on my Approach, dropping a low Courtesy : I thought I now and then could perceive Tears in her Eyes, and the whole Family took Notice her Temper was very much altered, from that Briskness usual to her, into a settled Heaviness and Melancholy. As I had conversed hitherto very little with the Sex, I was not at all apprehensive of the true Motives of this Change, and therefore out of Compassion, as imagining she had heard of some Misfortunes from Home, endeavoured by Pleasantry and good Humour to set her to Rights again ; and, as she was a

Favourite of Mrs. *Diaper's*, her young Master took the same Pains, and often rallied her upon the little Absence of Mind she was guilty of. One Day, in particular, having caught her all Tears in our Chamber, where I accidentally went for some Thing or other, I asked her seriously, if any Ill had happened to her, or, in short, if I cou'd any ways be of Service to her: Perhaps, says I, jocosely, you have received some bad News of your Sweetheart; but prithee, *Nanny*, don't fret thyself to Death about it; what, I suppose he is false, is not he? She immediately got up, and, casting a tender Look at me, passed suddenly out at the Door, saying, Ah! Mr. *Thompson*, if I have any Sweetheart, he is not far from this Spot, so much the worse Luck for me. I was immediately struck with the true State of the Case, and, though very artless and stupid in such Matters, perceived that I had been the Cause of all this sudden Alteration. In the first Motions of my Heart, I felt some Pleasure in the Thought of this Conquest, I must freely own; the Girl was young and handsome, and that was a dangerous Temptation to a young Fellow of my sanguine and warm Constitution; but soon the Checks of Reason and Morality got the better in my Mind, and I was resolved to behave to her in a more distant and cautious Manner; for as it was impossible and contrary to the Ambition of my Temper, and the Maxims of Prudence and Duty,

to.

to indulge a Fancy for her in a laudable Way, the exposing myself to Disgrace, and her to Ruin, was a Thought too horrid to harbour in a Soul that had been nurtured in a Detestation of the sordid and base Gratifications of the Passions. I seldom went into the House but at Meal-times, after this, or when my young Master accompanied me; and forbore either to speak to, or look upon her, hoping that this might induce her to come to a proper Way of Thinking; but I soon found this was a Distemper that was not to be cured so suddenly: In Proportion as I retreated, she grew more and more inflamed, and put herself in my Way wherever I went; would make twenty Excuses in a Day to ask for somewhat, or some Question in the Shop or Compting-house; and, as an Example of the dangerous and fascinating Wiles of Women, I myself grew uneasy, was restless, new and unusual Desires agitated my Breast, I began to burn for I knew not what, and it was with the utmost Force I restrained myself, when an unlucky Opportunity soon betrayed all my Resolves. The other Maid was one Day ordered with a Message in the Country, and unfortunately my Friend was engaged to dine Abroad, which he seldom did; so that I was forced to eat by myself, and nobody was there to wait on me but Mrs. Anne: The Journeyman was also at my Master's Country-house, where he had been invited to spend a Day or two. When I went up



to Dinner, I perceived at once that she was dressed with more than ordinary Care, and she behaved with so much ready Obligingness, that it was impossible for me not to fall into some Discourse with her; in short, Temptation and Opportunity were such forceable Batteries against my better Resolutions, that a Thousand wanton Ideas rushed into my Brain, and spread their baneful Influence over my whole Frame; she perceived my Situation, and improved it by all the Arts she was Mistress of; Nature, too weak to assist my Reason, she triumphed in the Spoils of my Innocence, and, emboldened by the first Trespass, the guilty Bliss was too often repeated, before I could persuade myself to retire. When I got by myself, I soon was tempted to deplore my Change of Condition; I accused myself of what I had been guilty of, with the utmost Shame and Confusion; I now found myself ruffled, uneasy and restless: Before, the Goodness and the Untaintedness of my Heart shewed itself in all my Actions, now I could scarce bear the Pain of Reflection, and dreaded to look even my virtuous Friend in the Face; the Crime itself, the Apprehension of the Consequences, the Fear of my own Reputation, the Injury I had done to an innocent Creature, as I thought her, by thus being seduced to indulge her Weakness, altogether made my Bosom a perfect Hell: I began to form Schemes of concealing the fatal Intercourse, and found, alas!

las ! for the first Time, that I must learn to be a Hypocrite, to pretend that Innocence, which was now no more : The Thought of thus *living a Lye* \* gave me still more inexpressible Torture. I resolved to renew the Guilt no more, and then immediately forfeited my Resolution ; nor was my Anxiety confined to my own Reflections ; I met with Reproaches from her, and Bewailings of what would become of her ; I was obliged to truckle to her Temper, to keep Things easy ; she perceives herself with Child, renews her Complaints, I promise Fidelity ; she grows jealous, watches my Actions, upbraids me, weeps, swoons away : I gratify her with Money, sooth her, and, in short, become a very Wretch and mere Slave.

Ye Youths, beware how ye yield to the first Attacks of Vice ; how cautious ought you to be to guard against the first Allurement, the beginning Witchcraft ; let it attack you in what Shape it will, it is equally destructive, equally perverse of your future Good, equally conducive to extirpate the Relish of Virtue from your Minds ; but, above all, beware of it, when it approaches you under the soft, the too enchanting, too captivating Charms of female delusive Arts ? It is then ye ought to *put forth your utmost Strength, work every Nerve*, to resist the subtle Invader ! Peace and Serenity of Mind once destroyed, the Consequence is dreadful ;

ful ; seldom we have the Power to retreat, but hurry on to bury, in a Wild of Folly and Intemperance, the little Reflection, and the woeful Regrets, that will still continue to haunt our Souls.

The Relish I used to have for the Company of young Mr. *Diaper* was palled, I had a secret Kind of Envy of his superior Virtue ; he perceived my Alteration, but I ascribed it to the Head-ach, Lowness of Spirits, and other Causes ; Business languished with me, Home was uneasy to me, where I met with nothing but Reproaches from myself, and Upbraidings from the Authorefs of my Misery. The delicate and fine Sentiments I had imbibed, and the Turn of my Mind, which was of a genuine pure Cast, now gave me repeated Vexations, never-ending Reproaches : I sought to bury my Disquiets in Company ; the Minute the Hours of Business were over, I was no more to be seen, but, assorting myself with some of the neighbouring Apprentices of my own Age, whose Company I before had despised, endeavoured by Wine and Mirth to drown and silence my Regrets. The Two whom I was most frequently engaged with were *Will Prim*, a Mercer's Apprentice, who had served half his Time, and *Dick Prig*, an Attorney's Clerk, whose Servitude was just expired ; As these young Fellows were of a lively, gay, thoughtless Disposition, and their Conversation was full of Humour, I suffered myself to spend whole  
Even-

Evenings in their Company, in a Sort of Club or Society, which met at those Times, to unbend themselves after the Fatigues of the Day.

---

## C H A P. X.

*Account of his new Associates. He is disgusted with their Manners and Behaviour.—Becomes acquainted with Mr. Speculist.—He imbibes his Principles.—Turns Rake — Removes his Mistress to ready furnished Lodgings, where she is brought to Bed.*

**M**R. *Prim* was a young Man of a good Share of natural Sense, which he had woefully perverted, and a tolerable Education, by practising all the reigning Follies; but he retained an unusual Flow of Expression, which was very engaging. *Prig* was of a more reserved Disposition, and had preserved hitherto the Appearance of Virtue, by the deepest Hypocrisy and Dissimulation; he had been bred up to Learning, in which he had made considerable Improvement, and manifested his Talents at Disputation and Controversy, with great Applause.

The rest of our Company consisted of Journey-men and Apprentices, all in the same Neighbourhood, whose Characters and Capacities were as various

rious as their Professions. Nothing could better evidence the beginning Depravity of my Mind, than the Pleasure I took in these Meetings; and what I at first had Recourse to, to chase away disagreeable Reflections on my late Miscarriage, was almost become so habitual, that I longed till Business was finished, that I might fly to my new Companions. The Conversation, however, soon grew distasteful to me, generally rolling upon the Secrets of their Masters, the Tricks practised in Trade, Sarcasms upon the Behaviour of the Persons they lived with, and Descriptions of Scenes of Madness and Debauchery; and, when the Discourse grew dull, it was the Custom to sing a Song round. I had never been used to any, but such Converse as improved and left a pleasing Relish upon the Mind; and I was not yet so lost to myself, as not to perceive the gross Folly of spending Time in so empty and frothy a Manner; besides, I perceived by the Run of the Discourse, that most of my Companions were the worst of Men, and that they were not ashamed to boast and vaunt of such Actions as I could not, even now, reflect on without Horror. I became consequently very dull and melancholy, which was soon perceived, and the Cause guessed at by *Prig*, who often proposed to advance some serious Topic of Discourse; and blamed the rest for employing their Time, and the Time of the Company, so much in talking of Trifles, or Wick-  
edness.

edness, which he said was worse. I was too good a Bait to be lost so soon; I had Money enough, and was very generous, and my two new Friends had supplied their wants two or three Times at my Expence, which they did with the most careless and jantee Air imaginable, always promising an immediate Return, which however was never again thought of. I was just in the Humour of leaving them one Night for ever, when a young Gentleman came into the Room, at whose Appearance they all expressed the utmost Satisfaction, and saluted him familiarly, by the Name of *Harry Speculist*; his Deportment spoke somewhat so modest and so genteel, that I constrained myself and sat down again in my Place; after the usual Salutations, I was presented to him as a Gentleman deserving his Acquaintance, and I could overhear *Prig* telling him that I was a clever young Fellow, a Scholar, and a Man of Sense. The Conversation then became general, till the New-comer reproved one of the Company for Swearing, which gave me a great deal of Pleasure: He then harangued upon the odious, unprofitable, and vulgar Nature of that useless Vice, in so pretty and so polite a Manner, that I was quite enamoured with him, and parted that Evening, after we had mutually requested the Pleasure of each other's Company the next Night; when, according to Agreement, we met, and happened to be near half an Hour together before the

rest

rest came. After some cursory Compliments, he told me, that he observed last Night that I did not seem much pleased with the Company; and really, “ says “ he, I must agree with you, that the Conversa- “ tion amongst them is much beneath the Dignity “ of a Man of Sense and Reflection, or a rational “ Creature: I have absented myself frequently on “ that Account; but, as I know my Company “ is esteemed by them, my Benevolence to my “ Fellow-creatures will not suffer me to abstain “ from my Visits altogether; and I the rather “ come now and then, as perhaps I may be lucky “ enough to drop somewhat or other, that may “ benefit them, and engage them to forsake some “ Follies that I fear they are not a little guilty of.”

I commended his Disposition, which appeared to me perfectly amiable, and we were entering into a very entertaining Conversation, when Mr. *Prig* and two or three more entered the Room. The Conversation then became general, and at length produced a Dispute between Mr. *Speculist* and *Prig* upon the moral Fitness of Things; in which I discovered either of them was far from being an Advocate for Revealed Religion. However, what *Speculist* said, was modest and spoke with Candour and a Shew of Impartiality. I soon became very intimate with this Person, who seemed to behave irreproachably, and understood he had been designed for the Church; but, a Fortune of 200 *l. per An-*

*num*

*num* coming to him by the Death of an Uncle, he chose to live unincumbered by the Duties of any particular Profession. In Proportion as this Intimacy increased, I discovered new Matter for Respect in my new Acquaintance, who now engrossed rather too much of my Time; he had a large Share of Knowledge, and the most taking Manner of Expression and Address that I ever met with; but it would have been happy for me, had I never known him; his Principles were detestable, and, tho' he covered his Failings with great Art, yet I found, in some Time, that he was much addicted to very coarse Gratifications of his Senses, and that his Devotion to Women was excessive. In short, the unsettled and anxious State of my already tainted Mind gave me up a Prey to his Maxims and Principles, and I soon began to see Difficulties in the Sacred Writings, and Absurdities, as I foolishly imagined, that tottered my Faith to the very Foundation. I began to think our Passions were given us to be gratified, and so long as Scandal could be avoided, which was the whole that constituted the Crime, I might indulge in the most guilty Excesses: Actions, we agreed mutually, were no otherwise good or bad than as they promoted or interfered with the Happiness of the Community, and that all Ceremonies or Modes of Worship were empty and ridiculous; and thus, in a few Months, I was involved in  
guilty



guilty Courses, and a few fallacious Arguments, that too much flattered my present Temper, overturned what the Wisdom and Goodness of my Father had been erecting in my Soul for Years. This, however, is certain, that I had been secure from all the Arts of *Speculist*, whose Arguments, in my more sober Moments, appeared very Cobwebs to me, had I not been previously guilty of a Crime that had unhinged and unsettled my Temper, and untuned my Mind for the Practice of any good Precepts.

By this Time *Nanny* began to shew her Pregnancy; and, as she had preserved a tolerable Appearance of Respect for some Time past, I agreed to a Request she made me, to provide her a Lodging, and give her some Support, for the further Gratification of my unlawful Appetites: Accordingly, pretending she had received a Letter, that her Father was very bad, and requested her to come into the Country, she obtained her Discharge from our good Mistress, who parted with her, as did all the rest of the Family, without the least apparent Suspicion of what had happened; and I saw her to an Apartment I had provided in the Skirts of the Town, supplying her with what Money was necessary in her present Condition. I generally visited her every Evening, and renewed now, without much Compunction, that Intercourse that had brought me thus into so dismal a Situation. At the  
Distance

Distance of three Months after her Removal, she was delivered of a Son, which happily died in the Month: And now I more than ever herded with *Prim* and his Companions, often staying out late, and frequently not returning Home all Night, which induced great Expences; and, together with those of my Mistress, reduced me to very great Straits: Young Mr. *Diaper*, tho' he carried a Face of more Gravity and Concern than ordinary, took no Manner of Notice of the Difference of my Conduct, but, in every Thing, had hitherto behaved with his usual Friendship and Kindness, which I was far from deserving, being become a most notorious Rake and Debauchee.

---

C H A P. XI.

*His Extravagancy perceived by his Father's Friend, to whom he was intrusted.—He advises him.—He grows quite neglectful of his Business.—Tender Discourse between him and young Diaper.—Extravagancy of his Miss.—Quarrels with her.—Discovers her Infidelity.—Parts with her.—Receives a Letter from his Father.*

MY frequent Demands upon Mr. *Deacon*, the Gentleman to whom my Father had recommended me, and intrusted with the Payment of my Allowance,

Allowance, and who had behaved with the greatest Respect and Consideration imaginable, ever since his Departure, made him very suspicious that my Conduct was not so right as it had been formerly ; for, in the first two Years of my Time, I had not drawn above a Third of what he was desired to supply me with ; and now, all on a Sudden, as it were, taking the Remainder out of his Hands, and pressing for more every now and then, with great Earnestness, it was very natural for him to think oddly of the Matter. He spoke to my Master, and his Son, about it, and enquired privately into my Behaviour ; but, as to my Master, he knew nothing to the contrary, but that I behaved as well as usual ; and, as to his Son, he had too much Affection for me to betray his Sentiments, or the Knowledge he had of the Alterations that he had observed in me ; therefore he imagined that I might have fallen upon some Scheme to imploy the Money, in some Way or other to my Advantage, as he had observed in me before a great Disposition to Oeconomy and Frugality : However, this did not hinder him from giving all the proper Advice that he thought necessary, in my unguarded Time of Life. He laid open the Vices and Follies of the Town, with becoming Indignation ; and pointed out to me those Rocks and Quicksands on which so many unhappy young Men had been lost. As I had a great Regard and Respect for him, I always attended to what he said with

with Abundance of Patience ; for I had not yet learnt to despise Instruction, or to be disobliged with Reproof ; and gave him such Answers, as, for the present, allayed his Fears ; and accordingly he had not wrote about them to my Father.

My friendly young Master all this Time was very uneasy, on my Account ; he was sensible, that, if I was engaged in any laudable Pursuit, I should, with my former Freedom, have imparted it to him, and asked his Advice, as usual, till lately ; and therefore feared, considering also the constant Embarrassment of my Behaviour and Countenance, that somewhat very extraordinary had happened to me ; but my Staying out of Nights convinced him that I was detained for no Good : I could often perceive him sigh ; and as his Love for me was very great, and indeed met with a most affectionate Return, and an unreserved Confidence, till I was thus hurried from myself by this Breach in my Morals, he could no longer conceal his Concern ; and one Evening, when I was going to my usual Rendezvous, he begged the Favour of my Company, a Request I could not possibly help complying with.

We spent the fore Part of the Evening in our usual Manner, conversing on several useful Topics, and reading alternately ; and, to render my Detention the more acceptable to me, he provided a Supper, and the Glass was circulated with more Freedom than ordinary. He accidentally, at length,

took up the *Fair Penitent*, which lay on the Table; and, turning it over, asked my Opinion of the tender Scene between *Altamont* and his Friend *Horatio*, after he had discovered the Falshood of *Calista*. I freely confessed I thought the Poet had worked it up with a great deal of Judgment; and that, considering the Provocation *Altamont* had given his Friend before, it was a Master-piece to introduce *Lavinia*, without whose Interposition it would have been very improbable to effect such a Reconciliation. Thence our Discourse rolled on the Nature of Friendship, about which our Sentiments were quite conformable: And now, dear *Joe* (says he) may not I reproach you for Want of Friendship to me? I have observed an unusual, unlooked for Alteration in your Behaviour, for many Months: I am sensible your Coldness towards me has not been caused by any Thing I have said or done to offend you; I have too great a Regard for you ever even to think of any Thing likely to give you Pain or Uneasiness; what then is the Reason I am become distasteful to you? You shun me, and fly my Company, as if it was disagreeable to you. As a sincere Friend is one of the greatest Blessings in Life, to be disappointed in such an Enjoyment is one of the greatest Mortifications imaginable; and our Friendship was of such a Nature, having—*Severest Virtue for its Basis*, as the Poet says, that nothing but a Deviation from its divine Principles,

Principles, I think, could destroy our Union. My Affection to you is, perhaps, more strongly rooted than you can well imagine ; how then can I perceive the Cloud you wear upon your Countenance, and that visible Alteration in you ; you, who was a Pattern of Regularity and Sobriety, without feeling the most pungent Sorrow ? For God's Sake, *Joey*, unbosom yourself to me ; whatever has happened, I am ready to comfort and assist you, not only by Words, but will relinquish every Thing in my Power to restore your Quiet. I am sensible of your late Familiarity with *Prim*, and, take my Word for it, he is a very Wretch ; and, tho' you never asked me my Opinion of Mr. *Speculist*, I will plainly tell you, that, if it be no Impeachment to your good Sense to keep him Company, yet, in Time, it will be very destructive of your Morality ; there is scarce a more vicious Fellow breathing, and he is a Companion the more dangerous, as he gilds over his Vices with the Appearance of Reason and Philosophy. What would our Fathers say ! what would they think of you, if you were known to like his Fellowship and Conversation !—So home a Charge gave me the utmost Pain ; I blushed, and was confounded, and sincerely hated myself, for abusing so much Goodness and Generosity : In that transient Moment I took a silent Resolution to leave off my Follies ; I was relieved by the Thought ; I resumed a free Air,

and, without much Constraint, told the dear Youth that I was sensible my Conduct had been very reproachable:—Not so, says he, I don't reproach you; I desire to know nothing you are not willing I should know, only return to the warm Friendship you have always seemed to be inspired with, and save me from the Pain of thinking that you are pursuing a Course that will make you completely wretched. —These last Words were accompanied with a Tear or two, which excited the same Motions of Grief in me. I promised the dear Friend, that I would soon disclose my whole Soul to him, and, in the mean Time, begged him to suffer me to drop the Discourse, which became too tender for me to support; he consented, we entered upon indifferent Matters, and I seemed to be that Night robbed of all my Disquiets, by the Resolution I had taken. I perceived, by some Part of his Discourse, that he guessed a little at my Situation; the Idea gave me Torture inexpressible; I resolved, over and over, to forsake my silly and vicious Companions, and to return again to the happy State I had lost almost the Relish for. A!as! how frail are all our Resolutions? I think I was bewitched, and the next Night destroyed the Force of every Thing that passed the Night before: My Mind, used to Idleness and Folly, was not so soon to be restored to itself, and made capable of sober Reflection; the Glass was circulated, the Jests flew about the Table;

*Speculist*

*Speculist* harangued, and I forgot myself and my Friend : How hard is it to recover the Mind, when too much Pleasure has softened and enervated it ? The Returns of Vice, like those of an intermitting Fever on the Body, are not to be resisted ; it bears all before it, and destroys every sober and reasonable Suggestion.

My Neglects grew quite notorious at Home ; whole Days, as well as Nights, were spent with my new Companions, or my Girl, in all the abandoned Looseness imaginable : Mr. *Deacon*, in vain, advised me, and threatened to write to my Father : I was lost to all Sense of my Duty, and Reputation itself ; when an Accident, that befel me, rather conduced to confirm me in my bad Courses, than to shew me the Folly of them, by dictating to my unhinged and perverted Imagination, that all the Pretences that were made in the World to Religion and Virtue were Hypocrisy and Dissimulation.

The false Pleasures I received in my Amours, which were not sole'y confined to *Nanny*, if I had not been lost indeed to all Sentiments of Happiness, were mingled with so many disagreeable Circumstances, that I shou'd not have long thought them engaging. As to her, I began to receive the most cutting Affronts from her ; she had lost all her Softness and Complaisance, and domineered and flounced about, in a Manner that surprised me ; her Ra-



paciousness and Extravagancy made me perpetually uneasy; she had even prevailed on me to write to my Father for an Increase of his most generous Allowance, and I had been such a Dupe to comply. Our Meetings were generally ushered in, and concluded, with a Quarrel, in which we mutually accused each other for being the Cause of our present Unhappiness: In short, I grew jaded and tired; seldom came near her; and, if Fear of her violent Temper had not deterred me, should have parted with her with great Satisfaction. I thought I perceived of late a Self-interestedness and cunning Reserve, that I had never noticed before. I had stayed away from her one whole Week, when I took a Resolution to call upon her, to leave her some Money, having just received some from Mr. *Deacon*, which, indeed, upon my Importunity, he had advanced, before it was due. When I came to the Door, the Woman of the House told me, with a half Smile, that Mrs. *Jenkins's* Cousin was with her, for that was the Name we went by there, myself passing for her Husband, who was a Tidewater, and employed chiefly in Business upon the River, which made my Visits so uncertain. The Word *Cousin* startled me, for I had really some little Affection for her; and, upon Enquiry, the Woman told me she thought I had known of his Visits, for he was there every Day. I said no more, but softly stole up Stairs into the Bed-chamber, where,

where, from a Closet, I could over-hear every Thing that passed in Madam's Dining-room; and had not been placed long, but, to my great Surprise, I heard the Voice of Mr. *Packer*, our Journeyman. The Reader may easily guess my Astonishment, and the Conjectures that distracted my Brain, when I was relieved from my Doubts of the Reason of his being there, by the following Dialogue, frequently interrupted with Kisses: So, says he, the young Puppy has not been here this Week, you say; upon my Word, *Nancy*, you should act a little more politically; if you use him so roughly, you will lose your Spark, and you know we cannot do without him: That's true, says she, but, as at first I gave myself to him to screen our Correspondence, you must be sensible that I can have no Regard for him, but the utmost Aversion, which, in short, I begin to be unable to conceal; I wonder you will put me to so difficult a Task: If it was not for his Money, replied he, he might be d——d; but it is impossible for me, in my present Situation, to keep you myself; and, therefore, as we reap such a Benefit from him, you should behave so as to secure him till we can do better.—This Speech was succeeded by an Embrace, which I could perceive was carried on to the last Crisis. My Surprise and Astonishment at this exceeded Description; I trembled with Rage and Fury, my Knees tottered under me, and I was

ready to fall on the Floor ; but, recollecting myself, I made Shift to find my Way down Stairs ; and, going to a neighbouring Public-House, wrote the following Letter, and left it with the Woman to deliver to her, together with two Guineas ; and, paying the Arrears of Rent due, told her I discharged myself of any farther Care about paying for the Lodgings, and then departed, pleased with myself for having exercised so much Temper and Prudence :

M A D A M,

**T**H E Proofs I have just received of your ill Treatment of me, from first to last, by the Discourse I have over-heard between you and your *Paramour*, have determined me to be your Dupe no longer. I don't pretend to upbraid you, but only reflect upon my own Folly and Stupidity, for suffering myself to be made the Tool and Property of a base, designing Woman, so evidently to my Hurt and Detriment. I have discharged what was due for your Lodging, and have left two Guineas in your Landlady's Hand for your present Use ; for you may assure yourself you will no more hear from

J O S E P H T H O M P S O N.

P. S. If your Acquaintance behaves prudently, it shall not be my Fault, if any Thing of his Conduct transpires.

Had

Had any indifferent Person been the Accomplice of this Woman, I believe I should immediately have grown sick and tired of Vice, which wears so many Thorns about it; but *Packer* was reckoned a Prodigy of Sobriety, and had made Shift to behave so cautiously, that he was the Favourite of our whole Family, and had been particularly obliging to me: He was a constant Church-goer, and put on such an Appearance of Religion and Sanctity, that he was the last Person I could have suspected of any criminal Action; but now, discovering the Blackness of his Behaviour, I concluded, all in a Hurry, that there was no real Goodness in the World, and strengthened myself with a Maxim of *Rocheffoucault's* that *Speculist* had ever in his Mouth, *That all Mankind are Knaves or Fools, and only differ from one another, as they are more or less so.* Thus I argued, or seemed to argue, myself into a Belief, that Hypocrisy and Dissimulation, rather than any real Virtue or Piety, was the Source of the orderly Behaviour of those that passed for the best People. I rejoiced at my Delivery from the Slavery and Expence I was involved in, and swore that no particular Object should by any means bring me again to so much Folly. These Resolves were more strengthened by the Conversation I had, the same Evening, with *Speculist*; and I still increased them by the Mirth that was inspired by Wine, and the Company of my old Associates.

When I returned Home, Mr. *Deacon*, I found, had left a Letter, which he received inclosed in one to him from my Father, which hastily breaking open, I found to the following Effect :

*Dear Son,*

I Can't help telling you, that your desiring an Augmentation of the Sum I allow you for your Expences has very greatly surpris'd me, and I can't at present imagine how you could even dispose of what you have had already. If I was apt to suspect your Conduct, I have but too much Reason to do so, as I have, to my great Concern, found you slack and remiss in paying the Compliment of writing to me and your Mother ; and Mr. *Deacon* has, with the utmost tender Regard, however, to you, hinted some Things to me which cannot fail giving me considerable Pain : But as your Master, in his last Account of you, said so much in your Praise, and I know you so well secured from the Attacks of Vice or Folly, which ride predominant in *London*, by a virtuous and sober Education, and an excellent natural Temper, I will not give Way to any uneasy Surmises ; nay, I have even gratified your Request, and have desired my Friend to increase your Stipend ten Pounds every Year. I hope, my dear Child, you will not give me Occasion to repent my Indulgence : I am sensible of the many Temptations Youth are

liable to in that wicked Town : I am even tempted sometimes to blame myself for being the Instrument of your going there ; but, all Things considered, and reflecting upon the excellent Examples before you, in your worthy Master and his amiable Son, I believe I may make myself easy. Remember one Thing, that immoderate Expences, even in the innocent Cravings of Nature, and the Fashions that Custom has introduced, is a Thing of a very bad Tendency, and will, in Time, engage a corrupt Habit of Mind. I would not have you mean and sordid ; your Temper and Constitution secures you from that ; and, on the other Hand, employ your Money judiciously, and let not your Plenty be a Temptation to a too great Indulgence of Pleasure, or any extravagant Gratifications. Sir *Walter*, who has built an House in our Neighbourhood, and the young Lady, who is always with your Mother, and seems to have a great Regard for me and my Family, desire their Compliments to you : Your Mother sends her Blessing, and you have the same, most heartily, with Prayers for your Health and Welfare,

*From your very affectionate Father,*

WILLIAM THOMPSON.

## C H A P. XII.

*He frequents the Playhouse.—Converses with Women of the Town.—Resorts to Bawdy-houses.—Adventures at a noted Bagnio.—Beats the Watch.—Is carried with Prim to the Watch-house.—They are released.—Pays a Debt for Prig.—Commences an Acquaintance with Mrs. Modish.*

**T**HIS Letter of my Father's, at first, gave me a great deal of Pain, and opened a Field of Reflexion, which, however, I soon overcame: If it did me any Service, it was only to make me more careful of keeping up Appearances at Home, that my Master might not perceive my Alteration of Character; therefore I never staid out late, or lay out all Night, at those Times which he spent in Town, which were now less frequent than ever, as his Son was more and more capable to supply his Place; and, as to him, his Friendship silently winked at every Thing. Freed from the Incumbrance of the perfidious Wretch my Mistress, and Packer, for his own Sake, behaving with great Circumspection and Modesty, I gave a Loose to the false Pleasures I was devoted to, more than ever; every Night carried me with *Speculist*, *Prig*, or *Prim*, to the Theatre, which was now become my reigning Taste; but as my Soul was muddied, and  
foul

soul with vicious Taint, all the sublime Morality of our excellent Dramatic Performances was lost upon me, and, mingling with the senseless Herd, it only became a Place of downright Debauchery, and stupid Sallies of incoherent Impertinence; Hissing, affronting the Audience, drawing Blushes from the Fair, intriguing with the Actresses behind the Scenes, attending the Levee in the Green Room, conversing with the lowest Part of the Town, tho', perhaps, distinguished by Dress and Title, Buffoonry, Bawdry, and rank Nonsense, were the delicate Inducements that drew us there: Often our Entertainment concluded with a riotous Quarrel, wherein the maddest Actions, the most obscene and irregular Starts of Passion, distinguished us; and as we seldom went there till we were top-heavy, as the Saying is, we frequently came off with the worst: From thence we used to adjourn to the Tavern, and, when thoroughly inflamed with the inspiring Juice of the Vine, scour the Hundreds of *Drury*, and commit such Pranks, as it were a Shame and Reproach even to mention. The Women of the Town now engaged my Attention, and, for a Time, I took the greatest Pleasure imaginable in frequenting the dark Regions of Lust. To describe the various Broils this engaged me in, and the *hair-breadth 'Scapes* I had from the Wiles of the flattering Whore, and the Rage of the swaggering Bully, would tire my Reader's Patience, and



and keep him too long from Things of greater Moment, and of more engaging Relish. The Tricks I have seen put upon the Unwary that fell into these righteous Hands, the loathsome Nauseousness of those apparently tempting Charmers, when viewed in *puris naturalibus*, would have soon given a Surfeit to any but a Wretch who had thrown aside all Delicacy and Consideration, and the Exercise of Reason and good Sense. My Excesses of this Kind frequently made me the Victim of the most shocking Distemper ; which, however, as I suffered it to run to no Extremity, gave me but a slight Uneasiness ; a Surgeon's Apprenticeship, one of our Gang, was always at Hand, with his own Skill, and his Master's Medicines, to patch up the Disorder, without Hindrance, or Confinement sufficient to draw us off long from the odious Custom of resorting to those Temples of *Satan*. The Life of a common Prostitute is surely the most miserable that Imagination can form an Idea of, ever subject to the brutal Violence, and filthy Embraces, of a promiscuous motly Herd, and, like the common Sewer, a Receptacle of all Filth that flows from the libidinous Excesses of the Town ; nor could the famed Box of *Pandora* contain more Evils than she is made the Inheritor of ; till a constant Pursuit of the same filthy Trade totally demolishes her Health, and she rots away by Peace-meal, and at length is  
too

too often exposed and abandoned to a shocking untimely End, by the Course of the slowly stealing Corruption, or the Hand of Justice heavily pressing her for some trivial Theft, that, perhaps, her woeful Wants have forced her to commit.

One Evening *Prim* and myself had formed a Resolution of lying at a noted Bagnio near *Charing-Cross*, to purchase the Enjoyment of a fresh Brace of these *Dulcinea's*, being quite cloyed with those at our usual Resorts: Being Strangers to the Governess of these *Filles de Joye*, we persuaded *Speculist* to introduce and start the Game. Old Mother *Damnabla* received us with great Affection of Complaisance, and calling us her Children, the usual Cant, saluted us severally with a Pair of Lips, that expelled a Breath equalled by nothing but the cadaverous Scent of a putrified Carcase, and had almost prejudiced me against the Goods we were going to cheapen. *Speculist* asked her, How Trade stood? Alack, my Dear, says the whining Bawd, I am almost ruined; these Half-pay Officers lie so heavily upon my Hands, and score up more than I take of my other Guests; well, God bless the King, but, if we had another War, I might have some Chance for my Money;—but what will you drink? I have some of the finest Arrack you ever tasted: Well said, Mother, let us have a staring Crown Bowl then? Fye, Mr. *Speculist*, sure you would not call for such a pimping Quantity as  
that;

that; what say you, *Love*, chucking me under the Chin, shall I make it up half a Guinea?—Here, Mrs. *Decoy*, fill this Bowl with Arrack. Won't you walk into the Parlour, Gentlemen? You will find all the Ladies there, poor Things, they want Company. Away we posted into the Parlour, and found three delicate *Bona Roba's* drinking Tea, and chatting by the Fire-side. Here an elegant Supper was served up, and, after replenishing the Bowl three or four Times, most of which was sucked up by Madam and her Nymphs, we settled the Preliminaries; and, every Man singling his Doxy, mounted for our several Apartments, just as the Watchman had roared out past Two o'Clock. I must own, I thought I was going to clasp an Angel, the Red and White was so livelily displayed on her Cheeks, and the swelling Bosom gave me such a Prospect of heightened Raptures; so with eager Haste disrobing ourselves, we crept between the Sheets, prepared to employ our Time as industriously as eager Warmth foretold we should: My bashful Goddess, from her high Sense of Modesty, extinguishing the Taper, to hide, as she pretended, her glowing Blushes, being, poor Thing, but newly instructed in the Trade. In about an Hour afterwards we both fell into a sound Sleep, from which we were suddenly awakened by a thundering Noise at the Door, which at first I could not conceive the Meaning of, till I was thoroughly rous'd

rous'd by the terrifying *Cry of Murder—Thieves.*  
—Finding it high Time to provide for my Security, I huddled on my Cloaths in a Trice: As for Madam, she stood shivering and shaking like an Aspin Leaf; not that robbing the old Devil's House, she said, would affect her; but she was fearful the Rogues would abuse and violate her Person. I advised her however to stay where she was, whilst I, armed with a Poker, sallied forth as grim as *Hercules* or *Nero*. Upon coming into the Entry, which divided our Apartment from three or four more on the same Floor, I was immediately jumbled in the Dark amongst five or six Women, who, by their Voices, I found were the old Bawd and some of her Females, all trembling and crying to God, *to have Mercy upon them.* I ventured to ask the Meaning of their Fright; Alack-a-day, says the old Whore, I am ruined, Sir; to be sure they have moved off every Thing valuable below; and then blubbered out, Oh, my China! my Pewter! and to be sure they have broken open my Bar! I am an undone Woman! Well, says I, can't you strike a Light? And the good Mother then recollected she had a Tinder-box in her Room, but neither herself, nor any body else, could be prevailed on to stir to fetch it. Whilst this was under Debate, we heard the Door of another Room opened, and a hoarse Voice hollowed out, D—n your Blood, what is all this Racket for, are you all mad? Oh,  
Captain,

Captain, says one of the Wenches, there are Thieves in the House; and at that Instant a Noise, like the Overturning of a Table and Glasses, saluted our Ears: Oh, by G—, if that's all, says the same Voice, it is no Business of mine? D—n ye, why don't ye call the Watch? And so slapped the Door too again, and double-bolted it: Ay, says one of the Ladies, there is your Man of Courage for you, Madam; I am sure I would never disgrace Scarlet, if I was such a Coward;—you will take Care of Number one I perceive. Presently we heard a Stamping up Stairs, upon which the Nymphs all scudded, some into one Room, and some in another, wherever they could grope their Way. As soon as I perceived the Stamping was pretty near our Stair-head, I asked, Who is there, who is that? A Voice replied, which I soon distinguished to be *Prim's*; What the Devil have you been at, says I, old Friend; nay, I can't tell, says 'e, for I believe all the Devils in Hell are let loose below. By this Time Madam Governess brought a Light, and found *Prim* and me together; he without any thing on but his Shirt, and shaking with Cold till his Teeth uttered a Sound like the Ticking of a Clock, but more irregular. We resolved now to explore the Bottom of the Matter; so snatching the Light, and brandishing my Poker, I marched in the Van; *Prim*, armed with a Brass Candlestick, followed me, and the whole Bevy of Ladies brought

brought up the Rear ; when we came into the Parlour, where we had been drinking, we found indeed the whole Room stripped, and, turning our Eyes towards the Window, perceived that it had been broke open, and the Shutter had a Pannel completely cut out of it : Here was the Mystery opened, our next Work was to look after the Stragglers, if perchance any had lagg'd behind ; but our Search was fruitless, for our Noise had hurried them away so precipitately, that they had decamped without making any extraordinary Booty. The Man in Scarlet and *Speculist* by this Time had joined us, and proposed a Tiff of Punch, which, as soon as Mrs. *Decoy* had kindled a Fire, we had served up, and nobody remained dull but the kind Hostess, who was mourning over the Loss of a Punch-ladle and some other Geer which she missed after this Incurfion. Such a Groupe of Figures I never surveyed before ; the Women had only loose Gowns over them, and so dishevelled, that you would imagine they resembled so many Furies ; the Captain, who was now very valiant at Sight of a clear Coast and the Punch, had only his Regimental Coat on, and *Prim* had just put on a Gown of Mrs. *Decoy's*, which he found lying in the Kitchen ; as to the Mistress of the House, having nothing on to confine her Load of Belly, she appeared a Creature of such a Form, that it was impossible to invent a Name for. Every one  
moved

moved now to retire again to their warm Beds, and the same Hint was given to me by a female Voice over my Shoulder, which I then perceived proceeded from my Bargain, who I thought had not ventured out of her Room ; but oh Heavens ! *Ovid*, with all his *Metamorphoses*, could not have matched such a Transformation. The Red that had glowed in her Cheeks was now removed to her Chin, and her whole Face was such a Jumble of Colours, and so haggard and frightful, that I disputed the Identity of the Person : Instead of the swelling Breasts, two shivering Bags discovered themselves of the Colour of Bladders, and not unlike them, when just half blown up ; and, as to the jutting Hips, their Prominency, which before supported a slender Waist, was quite levelled and lost. Quite sick, and full of Aversion and Curses, I resolved to stay no longer ; and, *Prim* being of the same Mind, we left *Speculist*, and paying our Reckoning, which amounted to Forty-five Shillings, sallied out in Pursuit of farther Adventures. We directed our Course towards the City, and in my Way I took Occasion to ask my Companion how he came down Stairs at the Bagnio at that Hour of Night ; he informed me, that, being cloyed with his Doxy, he had gone down with an Intent to go to Bed to Mrs. *Decoy*, as had been often practised by *Speculist* in that House ; but found her Nest empty, and had been forced to hide himself, till the Thieves, of whom he counted

ed

ed Three, had evacuated the Premises. In our Way down the *Strand* and *Fleet-street*, we assaulted every one we met, chagrined with our late Disappointments; broke Lamps, kicked Strumpets, and abused the Watch, whose Lanthorns and Staves became a Prey to our Frolics, which we made Prize of, as they slept, contentedly snoring at their Stands. Turning the Corner of *Fleet-ditch*, we perceived one of these hopeful Guardians of the City's Peace in a profound Doze, his Lanthorn and Staff standing by him, which we seized and tossed over into the Ditch; but, waking suddenly, we were obliged to take to our Heels, followed by him and half a Dozen more of the Fraternity, whom he had alarmed with the Cry of *Watch*: As we were nimbler than our Pursuers, we should soon have got clear of them, if a Watchman had not started out of *Ludgate*, as we were scouring thro' the Gate, who at one Blow laid *Prim* flat upon the Pavement: Fired with this Disaster, and the Injury done to my Friend, I flew upon him, and, wresting his Weapon out of his Hand, soon sent him to bear him Company: By this Time more Assistance coming, I had a hard Task to maintain my Ground, and, after giving and receiving many weighty Thwacks over the Back and Shoulders, I was seized by two of them behind, and with *Prim*, who had just recovered, was in Triumph conducted to the Watch-house: There  
sat



fat in great State the Nocturnal Majesty of Mr. Constable, who, on hearing the Allegations of the Accusers, determined to accompany us directly to the *Compter*, for which Purpose he sent Orders for all his Band to attend him; but perceiving he was an hired Magistrate by his Appearance, and the Oddity of his Behaviour, I begged the Favour to speak to him apart, and pretending to know most People in the Ward, and adding to my Speech the prevailing Rhetoric of Half-a-Crown, he persuaded the injured Parties to come to Terms of Agreement, telling them, we seemed to be good-natured young Gentlemen, and would, no doubt, make them proper Amends. His Eloquence prevailed, and, a Gallon of Beer and a Quantity of Gin being set before us, we soon came to an Accommodation, and for the Sum of a Shilling to each, after paying for the Lanthorn and Staff, we were joyfully released. It was now light, and we made such a rueful Appearance, that we determined not to go Home till next Evening, and directed our Steps to the fresh Air of *Islington*, to endeavour, by the reviving Breezes of the Country, to get rid of the Qualms of our Drinking, and the Lassitude occasioned by Want of Rest. In our Way thro' that Part of the Suburbs in our Rout, who should we meet but poor *Prig*, in Durance vile, in the Hands of a Marshal's Court Catch-pole? He was quite ashamed of this Rencounter; but, understanding that he was only detained

detained for a Debt of Three Pounds to his Shoemaker, we jointly deposited the Money and the Costs, over a Quarter of Brandy at an Ale-house, and set him at Liberty. As he had made a Midnight Excursion also, we prevailed on him to go with us, and got about Dinner-time to *Holloway*, where we joined Company with a promiscuous Set of Persons that were just sitting down to Table, at a House we had often used before. Amongst the rest was a very handsome Woman, seemingly of about thirty Years of Age, whom her Husband, a morose, ill-behaved Man, had brought out for an Airing; she betrayed so much Aversion to her Yoke-fellow, and appeared so complaisant to every body else, that I soon judged her Disposition, and made all the Advances I could to a farther Acquaintance; and some of the Company, after the Cloth was removed, proposing a Walk in the Garden, I gave my Hand to the Lady, who willingly left her Spouse to blow his Pipe with my Companions, and two or three more, over a Bowl of Punch, and accompanied me. I found this Lady was not over coy, and judged by what I perceived, that, if Opportunity could be found, she would not shew much Obduracy to a warm pressing young Fellow. She had smitten my Fancy, and I was resolutely determined to possess her, and rendered myself so agreeable to her, that we made an Appointment to meet the next Day at an Acquaintance

quaintance of her's in Town, where I was to enquire for Mrs. *Modish*. We all came to *London* together, *Prim* and *Prig* having taken the Hint, and made themselves very agreeable to the Husband.

---

### C H A P. XIII.

*Fatal Consequences of his Amour.—Goes to the Masquerade.—Picked up at Vauxhall Gardens.—He is beat and stripped.—Gets to Mr. Speculift's Lodgings.—Catastrophe of Prim.—Contracts a bad Distemper.—Is quite reduced.—Pawns his Watch.—Goes to the Gaming-table.—Is kicked down Stairs.—Meets Prig at Tom King's.—Returns Home.—Is well received.*

WITH eager Expectation I counted the tedious Hours, the next Day, till the Time of my Appointment arrived, when, making an Excuse to go upon some Business to the *Custom-house*, I visited the Place that inshrined my Princess; which was at a little Shopkeeper's on *Tower-Hill*, where I found her waiting with as much Impatience as I could possibly be agitated with. I perceived this was not to be the Scene of our Amour,

for

for, when the good Woman was gone aside, she desired me to propose going with her to *Vauxhall*, and gave me Instructions to call her Cousin; this, as soon as Tea was ended, I did accordingly, and carried the Grimace on so well, that, having observed her Acquaintance express herself in a great Hurry of Business, I even pressed her to accompany us, which, as I knew she would, she very politely declined; so calling a Coach, I handed her into it; and, when I had joined her, ordered the Coachman to drive to *Vauxhall*, aloud; but, in a kind of Whisper, told him to make what Expedition he could to *Chelsea*. In our Way all the little wanton Blandishments that we had an Opportunity for were practised on both Sides; and, in short, we became so enamoured of one another, that the Coach went too slowly for our Wishes. She indulged me in the most tempting Liberties, and seemed quite pleased with, and proud of her Conquest. I understood her Husband was a rich Druggist, and that she had been married against her Consent and Inclination to him, which had, together with his most unfociable, jealous, and suspicious Temper, driven her to seek that Happiness and Felicity Abroad, that she could not meet with at Home. I began to think myself not at all to blame in this Intercourse; I looked upon her as a fine Woman in Distress, and flattered myself, that my affording her Relief, and Satisfaction,

faction, was meritorious. Thus falsely do we argue, when the Mind is depraved, and loaded with a Weight of Iniquity; we gild over to ourselves Crimes of the deepest Dye, if the smallest Circumstances can be gathered to alleviate them. I verily believe the most abandoned Miscreants thus reason with themselves, and that no Man, let him be ever so wicked, but suggests to his Mind some Excuse for what he commits, before he feels the false Pleasure in it that he proposes. A plain Proof this of the Human Heart's being originally created void of Blemish, and stimulated by the Author of Nature to nothing but praise-worthy Motions. I began to be tired of the promiscuous Latitude I had given myself in the Use of Women; those uneasy, wretched Days, that succeeded the loathsome revelling Nights, which left me all jaded, tired, and qualmish, began to give me Disgust; I looked upon this Adventure as a Relief from such nauseous Debauches, and resolved to confine myself solely to my present Object, and drink large Draughts of Love. Mrs. *Modish*, to a very fine Person, joined a Turn of Wit and good Sense that charmed me; I found her Conversation irresistible, and thought myself the happiest of Men in her Embraces. We spent the Day so satisfactorily to us both, that we parted not only with Regret, but in such a tender Manner, as began to make us both serious; and I must say, that, barring  
th:

the Indulgence of this one Appetite in so unlawful a Manner, she was not addicted to any one bad Property. Poor Woman! how happily, how prudently, she would have passed her Days, had Fortune bestowed upon her a Husband of good Sense and Humanity, that she could have an Affection for, instead of a sour, morose, jealous Wretch, who had not Capacity enough to put any Means in Practice to engage her Tenderness! Ye covetous worldly-minded Parents, how many unhappy Creatures you have made!

Our Meetings were now very frequent; I forsook my old Companions, and was bent on nothing else but pleasing and obliging her. Methought there was somewhat in it that flatteringly recalled me to my former Delicacy and good Taste; I imagined I was not doing any Harm, as our Intercourse gave no-body Disquiet; but this grave Species of Vice was soon to have a Period: We were one Evening returning from a Country Walk, her Arm fondly resting upon my Shoulder, when we were met by a Gentleman, the Sight of whom put her into the utmost Consternation; she trembled, and was ready to faint: I was soon delivered from my Ignorance of the Occasion, by hearing him say, *So, Sister, where have you been walking? I hope my Brother is well? Sir, your Servant, to me,* and then brushed by us with great Haste. When she recovered her Spirits sufficiently,

she informed me it was her Husband's Brother, who had always been her very great Enemy; and having some Expectancy, in case he should die without Children, would, no doubt, make a Handle of this Meeting to do her all the Prejudice in his Power. I was distracted at what I heard; my Disposition was too generous to think of the Insults she would be liable to with Patience; I even went so far, as to propose an Elopement to her, but, with the utmost good Sense, she repressed my Proposals, and particularly insisted, that she would do nothing to injure her Reputation, or to provoke my Ruin, which would, by such a Proceeding, be inevitable. I was convinced, and embraced her with all the Tenderness and Gratitude her Words inspired; we parted, and Tears were shed on both Sides, deceiving ourselves with the Hopes of silencing her Brother, which she promised to attempt, and Meeting the next Day again. Full of the Ideas of what might have happened, I went to the old Place of Assignment, but, instead of finding the Object of my Concern, had the following Letter given to me:

*Dear THOMPSON,*

**I** Fear, alas! this is the last Time that even the Liberty I at present take can be indulged: Our being met was discovered, before I came Home, with all the aggravated Circumstances that  
Malice

Malice could invent. You may guess the Usage I have had, from what you know of my Husband's brutal Temper: I will not give you the Pain, I am sensible, you'll feel in the Relation of it: In an Hour's Time I shall be hurried into the Country, where Confinement will be my Lot, perhaps till the Hour of my Death: I have only just Opportunity to write these two or three Lines unobserved: Guess the Torment this Cruel Separation from you occasions me! I believe you will be equally affected, but strive to forget an unfortunate Woman, and be happy as your Deserts can make you.

*Your affectionate Friend,*

KATH. MODISH.

'Twas a long Time before I could get over this untoward Accident; my Nature soft and compassionate, my Temper generous to an Excess, gave me more Disturbance than can possibly be imagined: I cursed myself, as the Author of her Misfortunes, and determined to take Vengeance on her Husband; but the little Reason I retained soon banished such Thoughts. I now again returned to my old Acquaintance, who received me as a Man risen from the Dead, for I had practised the utmost Deceit with *Prim* and *Prig*, and had made Shift to keep my Affair with Mrs. *Modish* an absolute Secret to every body. I mingled again in Noise, Folly, and Up roar, to get rid



of my Uneasiness; for some Time, the Remembrance of this charming Woman made it very insipid to me, but I soon became hardened against Reflection. We all expressed an Inclination one Day to visit the Masquerade, which about this Time was a Diversion very much admired; so accordingly equipping ourselves with proper Dresses, *Speculist*, *Prim*, *Prig*, and myself, entered the grotesque Assembly: Never was Surprise equal to mine at the Oddity of the Sight, which I had entertained no Notion of before; a Mixture of Beings, of both Sexes, employed in all the ridiculous Mummery that would only distinguish the Monkey Race; Whispering, Nodding, luscious Discourse, offensive to Modesty and good Manners, and, in short, secure in their Disguises, every one giving a Loose to the corrupted Dictates of their Hearts, and throwing aside every necessary Reserve. *Prim* soon got to the Gaming-table, where in a Trice, he emptied his Pockets, and came away cursing his ill Luck; *Speculist* got into a *Tete-a-tete* Discourse with a Coronet, with whom I saw him leave the Place; but understood next Day, that instead of a Countess, he was engaged with a Woman of the Town, who had Dexterity enough to make him spend a large Sum of Money, and, in Return, tipped him the Favour of a Clap: *Prig* exhausted all the ill-natured Malignity of his Heart in railing against the Company, and we,

both

both heartily tired, came away together, and adjourned to the Tavern, where we were soon after joined by *Prim*, with a most deplorable Length of Face, having lost to the Tune of twenty Guineas; and what made him the more uneasy, was, that at least a Moiety of it was Cash of his Master's. We contrived soon to ease that Part of his Pain, by making the Sum up between us; and, having sent Home our Dresses, we supped, and retired to our several Habitations, with an Appointment to be next Day at *Vauxhall*, where I promised to engage *Speculist* to accompany us.

At the Close of the succeeding Day, when I repaired to Mr. *Speculist*'s, to procure his Company, I found him so chagrined with his last Night's Mischance, that he resolved to keep his Chamber for some Time; so leaving him, I repaired to the Rendezvous, where I expected the other two; but when I had waited a pretty while, and perceived they neither of them came, I took Boat, and immediately rowed away for *Vauxhall*, resolved not to be baulked of the Pleasure I expected that Night. When we came opposite to *Whitehall* Stairs (as I had not insisted upon going singly in the Boat, but had given the Waterman Liberty to take in any Fare that might be agreeable to me) we were plied by a very pretty, young Lady, attended by a Footman in a green Livery; I gave her my Hand to help her in, which she accepted with the ut-

most Good-nature, and we put off again to pursue our Voyage. To have seen this young Lady, one would have imagined that she was the Goddess of the Silver Stream; 'twas impossible to survey her, without feeling one's self filled with the highest Complacency and good Humour; such an irresistible Sweetness played in her Features, that would have softened the Rigours of Pain, and smoothed the Brow of Anguish; her Modesty was unaccompanied with Affectation, and a single Look from her would have dashed assuming Rudeness. I thought myself entirely happy in having so gentle a Partner in my Boat; and strove, by all the little Civilities I was Master of, to make my Company and Conversation agreeable to her. When we landed at *Vauxhall*, she was received by a handsome young Gentleman, who accosted her with such a becoming Tendernefs, and whose Appearance lighted up such Satisfaction in her Eyes, that I discovered, before they spoke, that the strictest Ties bound them together. She very politely returned me Thanks for my Company, which were enforced by her happy Husband in so complaisant a Manner, that it almost raised Blushes in my Face. Understanding we were all bound to the same Entertainment, he begged the favour of my Company, which I was far from having the Power to refuse, they had gained such an Ascendent in my good Opinion. The Discourse of the Gentleman

was

was so judicious, and we were so mutually pleased with each other, that it was with Reluctance we parted, after some Time, when they left the Gardens, giving me a Direction where they lived, and desiring me to call, and continue the Acquaintance. I could not help envying the Happiness of this amiable Pair, Virtue sat so elegantly upon them, without any of that displeasing Stiffness, too often the Attendant of strict Morals, that I made many mortifying Comparisons between my present State and theirs, and indulged a few Moments Melancholy, upon my unhappy Turn of Mind; from which I was awakened by an ambling Female, who seemed to cast a kind Regard upon me, as I sauntered down one of the Walks: I passed her, we met again, I thought I discovered a certain *Jene-sçai-quoi* about her, that pleased me, tho' she appeared to be turned of Thirty. I was resolving to make some Advances to a further Acquaintance, when she accidentally stumbled within a few Paces of me, and I eagerly ran to her Assistance, and supported her in my Arms, she pretending to have sprained her Foot. I hope, Madam, you have not received much Detriment? No, Sir, she replied, with a Smile, I have no Pain, unless I am too troublesome to so generous a Gentleman: I assure you, my dear Creature, I rejoined, I am ever at the Service of the Fair; and, as to the Trouble you fear to have given me, it is your Fault if it is not repaid,

for I must own I feel it very considerable ; but I believe I had better conduct you to the next Seat, that you may repose yourself after your Fright ; she gave a silent Assent with a Nod of her Head, and I seated myself by her, and called for some Wine and Sweetmeats, when, either by Design or Accident, she spilt a Drop or two from her Glass upon my Hand and Ruffle, which endeavouring to wipe off with her Handkerchief, in the Contention between us, her Face was reclined so near to mine, that I stole a sudden Kiss ; at which she blushed, and seemed displeased ; but, resuming herself, would have taken her Leave, under Pretence of being fearful, lest she should be discovered by any one that knew her : Upon which, I proposed to attend her in a Walk thro' the Gardens, which, with a seeming Reluctance, she permitted. At the Bottom of one of the Alleys she was accosted very cavalierly by a young Fellow, under the Name of *Mrs. Tripsy* ; and, to my utter Surprise, I discovered by her Answer she was certainly a Lady of a very free Disposition, that is to say, one of those convenient and ready Commodities, that, without acting like a common Woman, only receive Visitors at their Lodgings under the highest Notion of Secresy. We presently, hereupon, grew very familiar, and, in short, I was foolish enough to propose going home with her to *Newington*, where she said she lodged ; and she was quickly prevailed upon

upon to accept of my Company. Nothing sure is so eminently calculated to soften the Mind, as these Places of Harmony; they raise Inclinations, in the most cold and frozen Constitutions, to all the soft Inducements of Vice: 'Twas with no little Shew of Reason that the famed Legislator banished Music out of his Commonwealth; every fascinating Note opens the Breast to receive the Impressions of Pleasure, and unmans the Soul, by propagating the enervating Weakness to which Human Nature is too subject. What Resistance can be made against the melting *Concord of sweet Sounds*? The Appearance of Beauty decked in all its wanton Attire, the inflaming Power of Wine, the verdant Bower, the fanning Breeze, conspire to the Destruction of that Regularity of Conduct, that nothing can atone the Transgression of. 'Twas pretty late before we departed; and as I had drank freely, as well as my Mistress, the Coach we hired, for our Tour to her Apartments, excited Desires in me which were too powerful to be delayed, and called for a speedy Enjoyment. We were locked fast in each other's Arms, when the Coach stopped, and I could over-hear a Volley of Oaths, from a Voice as hoarse as a Boatswain's, and a Demand of a Woman, who he was sure was in that Coach, and was his B——h of a Wife: I know there's a Fellow with her too, continued the Voice, but, by G——d, I'll spoil his Sport, he

shall never caterwaul in my Territories again, I warrant him; and, so saying, pulled open the Coach-Door. I had just recovered my Seat, when I was attacked with a smart Blow of a Cudgel over my Shoulders; and, at the same Time, Madam was hauled out by main Force, and I jumped out after her, and collared the Fellow; but, two or three more coming up at the Instant, I received half a Dozen Strokes more, which levelled me with the Ground. I had but just Strength enough left to ask the Meaning of all this, and, it being very dark, could neither discover the Number nor Faces of my Assailants. Oh! Damn you, d'ye chatter, you Dog, I'll give you your Hire before I have done with you, says the same Voice; and as to you, Madam, I refer your Punishment till I get you Home. The Woman then counterfeited Tears, and vowed to her Husband, as she called him, that I had forced her into the Coach with me; and, before I could appeal to the Coachman, I found he was one of the Gang, and corroborated what she said. This Parley was finished by so many Cuffs, Kicks, and Bastinadoes, that I fainted away; and, how long I lay in that Condition, can't well determine, but found myself, when I recovered my Senses, in the Arms of two or three Passengers, who happened to come that way, and had raised me up, and wiped the Blood from my Face. I had only my Breeches, Shoes, and Stockings on; my

my Coat, Waistcoat, Hat, Buckles, Gold-headed Cane, and about four Guineas which I had in my Pocket, were gone; therefore they made no Enquiry after my Mischance, perceiving I had fallen into the Hands of Footpads; and I had no Inclination to let them into the Truth of the Story. I begged them to help me to some House or other, which they complied with; and it proved to be a little blind Tippling-house, by the Side of the Road. The Landlord was prevailed upon to lend me an old Great-Coat, to go to *London* in, after leaving my Stockings, which were Silk, as a Security for the Return of it; otherwise, if I had died with Cold, he could not have been moved to assist me. 'Twas near one in the Morning before I got to Town, very faint, and hardly able to crawl; in which Condition, not caring to go Home, I went to Mr. *Speculiff's* Lodgings, and found him just come from the Tavern. After telling him my Story, which suggested a good deal of Warning to me, he got a Surgeon to look at my Wounds, who found nothing that required more than the Application of common Plaisters; and, being an honest Man, did not attempt, by any unintelligible Jargon, or the common Chicanery of the Profession, to make a Penny of my Cure. I slept very soundly till Ten the next Morning, and found myself able to return to my Business. My Friend *Diaper* was shocked at seeing the Change of my Dress,

for



for I had borrowed a Coat and Waistcoat of *Spraulist*; and seeing my Face bruised, and hearing my Relation of being robbed and stripped, in which I carefully concealed the Part that affected my own Conduct, he would not suffer me to enter upon Business, but insisted on my going immediately to Bed, which I did accordingly. I had now sufficient Leisure to reflect on my numerous Follies, and the Train of Mischiefs they had ingendered; and must confess my Actions at this Time appeared in so absurd a Light, that no Words can express the Confusion and disordered Shame that arose in my Breast. I resolved, if possible, to forsake such pernicious Courses for the Future, and was thus running on in Self-accusations, when *Prim* entered my Chamber, all pale and wan, and with a Countenance that betrayed the utmost Disorder of Mind. I was startled to see it, and asked, hastily, what brought him there, and what was the Matter? Alas! *Joe*, says he, I'm ruined for ever: You remember I was to have met you last Night, instead of which that Devil *Prig* tempted me to go to the Gaming-table, where I was fleeced of above fifty Pounds, which was most of it my Master's Money: He demanded it of me this Morning; I had no Excuse to make, and was obliged to confess the Truth: My Father was sent for, and the Result is, that I am going to Sea, to expiate my Crimes. I am now returning Home, and shall  
hardly

hardly see you again before I go: God bless you, my Friend, take Warning by my unhappy Fate, and leave off Courses of Extravagance, that can never fail of the most dreadful Consequences. In saying this, he let fall a Shower of Tears, and my Heart was too full for Utterance: We embraced, and took a Farewel, very likely for ever. The Misfortune of this young Fellow increased my Chagrine: Bating the Follies he was guilty of, he had every good Quality to recommend him. I heartily sympathised in his Trouble, and formed to myself still stronger Resolutions of Amendment.

For a Week after this Accident I lived regularly, and stuck close at Home; my Friend, charmed with this Appearance of Reformation, was quite beside himself with Joy, and studied to oblige me in every Thing; but I soon discovered that my last Amour had left a latent Poison in my Blood, that began to shew itself with very frightful Symptoms: I applied to a Surgeon, and it was his Advice that I should undergo a Salivation, without which, he assured me that I could never be perfectly cured. This Sentence distracted me; I cursed myself, and the Cause of my Sufferings; I was almost in the Mind to dispatch myself out of the Way; I could apprehend no means of keeping the scandalous Affair from being made public, to my utter Disgrace, and the Ruin of my Reputation; but Providence

kindly took my Part, and put it into the Head of my Friend to propose my taking a Country Journey of a Week, or so, for my Health, which was now visibly impaired, tho' he was far from guessing the Reason: I accepted the Liberty with Gratitude, and resolved to make it subservient to my Cure; accordingly, having put my Horse, which he lent me, to Livery, I took a Lodging at *Hoxton*, and the Surgeon began his Operations, providing a Nurse, and every Thing necessary. Notwithstanding the perpetual Perturbations of my Soul, I went thro' the Business with great Safety, and got up in three Weeks quite recovered of the vile Distemper, but so weakened, that I was hardly able to stir. It was necessary I should stay some Time to recruit my Strength, but my Money ran short, and it was impossible for me to procure a Supply without hazarding a Discovery: In short, I was reduced to the greatest Misery and Distress; every Thing valuable about me went, one after another, to the Pawn-Brokers, and at last my Watch, on which I procured two Guineas; and having recovered Strength enough, tho' not my Complexion, I was resolved to be confined no longer: so discharging my Lodging, I kept just five Shillings in my Pocket; but now my Horse must be paid for, before I could have him to make a Semblance of returning from the Country; I was here quite nonplussed; at length it entered into my

my Head, that I might perhaps be lucky at the Gaming-table in *Covent-garden*, where I had seen Persons that brought in a few Shillings carry off Pounds; the Suggestion was tempting, and I immediately obeyed it.

When I came into this School of Villainy, I could not help employing a few Minutes in surveying the Group of Figures that crouded about the Tables,

*Some to undo, and some to be undone,*

As the Poet says: That rapacious Eagerness and Avidity, the different Distortions of the Adventurers, shewn in their Faces, and the sudden Starts of Joy, or Ravings of Despair on the several Turns of Fortune, made me strongly conceive the pernicious Effects of this Vice, both to the Mind and Body: Here was a Creature chinking his ill gotten Treasure, and dancing about the Room in Extasies of Gladness; but soon behold what a Change! he is stripped by a Turn of Luck, and loses his last Shilling; he flings the Balls into the Fire, stamps, raves, curses his Folly, and acts over the perfect Madman; Blasphemies and Execrations, enough to fill the Soul with Horror, eccho throughout the Room; and a constant Buz and Tumult is heard on every Side: Envy, Hatred, Malice, Revenge, and all the unfociable and unamiable Passions, here reign in their genuine

nuine Deformity. I was lucky enough to win three or four Pounds at the Silver-table, after several Turns of Fortune, but could not be contented, and removed to the Gold-table, where, in the Twinkling of an Eye, I lost again every Shilling in my Pocket. I was perfectly distracted, and was so abominably imprudent, that I returned to the Silver-table again, and laid five Shillings to four, tho' I had not one Farthing about me, trusting entirely to good Luck; but I was woefully deceived, and not being able to pay what I had lost, notwithstanding all my Excuses, two or three Fellows disgracefully carried me to the Stairs, and, by the Vote of the whole Company, kicked me down from Top to Bottom, where the Attendants turned me out of Doors. As I had received no Hurt, I thought myself tolerably well off, tho' I was extremely mortified: What to do now I could not tell: but, thinking I should meet with some Acquaintance or other, I strolled over to *Tom King's*: Here the Scene was somewhat changed, in one Corner two or three drunken Sleepers, snoring away their Load of Liquor; here a Group of Rakes in lascivious Discourse, and wanton Attitude, with half a Dozen Whores; others, of both Sexes, poaching after Game; Brawling and Wrangling at one Box; Cursing and Swearing at another; at this Part of the Room a Pair of Boxers dealt lusty Blows on each other's Chops, whilst some  
dirty

dirty Devil of a Prostitute remained the Prize of him who had the Fortune to overcome his Antagonist; at another Part, two or three Viragoes were demolishing each other's Coifs, and rooting up their Hair, inspired by some sudden Gust of Jealousy. 'Twas for some Time before I cast my Eyes on any body I knew; at last, who should I discover, but *Prig*, as drunk as *David's* Sow, retailing out Law to an Audience of Market Women and Porters, who were going to fetch a Warrant for some poor Wretch from the Justice? He was overjoyed to see me, and, taking Advantage of his usual good Humour, in his Cups, I borrowed three Pieces of him, and then adjourned, without taking Leave, to the Inn where my Horse stood, where I went to Bed, after the most fatiguing, unhappy, and mortifying Day, that I ever passed in my Life.

Next Morning I took a Tour round the neighbouring Villages, and came Home as just alighted from a Journey; and, tho' my Stay had been so very long, I was received by my young Master with the highest Tokens of Friendship and Kindness.

## C H A P. XIV.

*Packer wrongs his Master, and is discharged.*

*—Discovers Thompson's Practices to Mr.*

*Diaper. — Generous Behaviour of young*

*Diaper. — He rescues him from Robbers. —*

*Bravery of Prig. — He is highly caressed by  
his Master and Mistress.*

SOON after my Return Home, an Affair happened that gave my Master a great deal of Trouble and Concern ; *Packer*, our Journeyman, with whom I had seldom held any Conversation since I discovered his ill Usage of me, and who, on his Part, behaved with great Civility, accompanied with a distant Reserve, had been frequently employed, in my Absence, in receiving Money of our Town Customers, which used to be constantly my Department. It happened, that the Day after my Arrival I was sent to a Retailer's Shop to receive a small Sum of Money which was become due, to the Amount of twenty-eight Pounds ; but they informed me that Mr. *Packer* had received it a Week before : I had no Suspicion upon this, but only imagined that he had forgot to settle the Book, which occasioned me to think it was still due. I came Home, and told *Packer* of his Neglect, which he seemed to be sorry for, and went directly

directly and entered the Sum on the Credit Side of the Account. As we were at Dinner, I informed my Friend what Business I had done, and, amongst the rest, mentioned the Error I had been led into, hoping our Customer would not be disoblged at it. He seemed quite surpris'd, and protested that *Packer* had never brought the Money on Account. He very seldom dined with us, having the Privilege to board himself at a Sister's he had, that kept an House not far from us; and therefore we carried on the Discourse somewhat further, and both agreed in observing that he had been very melancholy, and, as it were, out of himself for some Time past. It directly jumped into my Thoughts; that he was carrying on no good Design, which I had more Reason to imagine than any one; but, however, I would not strengthen Mr. *Diaper*'s Suspicions, but propos'd to go to all the Customers in Town, and see if we could gather any further Tokens of Infidelity; which my Friend agreed to and I put in Execution that very Afternoon. Upon the whole Scrutiny, we found he had received in all sixty eight Pounds more than he had accounted for, which made my young Master vastly uneasy, and not a little disturb'd me; for, on the one Hand, I lov'd Mr. *Diaper* and his Family too well to be unconcerned at such a Discovery; and, on the other, I fear'd, when Things came to Extremity, *Packer* might be Villain enough to hint

at



at some Particulars in my Conduct that would very greatly sink me in their Opinion. My Friend resolved to set out that Evening, tho' very late, to impart the Matter to his Father, desiring me to behave as usual, and not to seem to know any Thing of what he was going upon, at so unseasonable and unusual an Hour. Guess the Astonishment of our Master! when his Son made known to him the Dishonesty of *Packer*, he could scarce credit him; and, had he not been armed with the most convincing Proofs of his Trespas, he would almost have thought it a Forgery, such an Ascendancy he had gained over him by his Affectation of Religion and Sobriety. When he was thoroughly convinced, he set out for Town, and arrived at Home at about Eight o'Clock in the Morning, to the Surprise of all the Family; but to the utter Discomposure of poor *Packer*, whose Condition I heartily pitied, notwithstanding the Reason I had to detest him. At the Distance of an Hour or two after his Arrival, he ordered him to appear before him, and what passed we could not learn; only he was dismissed from his Place, but in so considerate a Manner, as not to drive him to any desperate Sally of Rashness. I could perceive the Tears trickle from his Eyes; but, as I feared it would look like an Insult upon his Misfortunes, had I taken any Notice of him, I retired till he was gone. My Master then called up his Son and me, and addressed

dressed us thus: I am sorry for this poor Wretch; certain unhappy Habits he has contracted have brought him thus to betray my Confidence; but I hope my Lenity, and the Instructions I have given him, will prevent his total Ruin. What surprised me greatly, Child, applying himself to me, was, that he gave me some Hints that you had swerved from those excellent Principles you imbibed from your Father, and have even shewn a Neglect of my Business: I must own I am apprehensive the Share you had in the Detection of his Knavery put him, unhappy Creature, upon this Accusation. Depend upon it, Sir, says my Friend, that must be the Case, for Mr. Thompson is so constantly in my Company, that nothing of that Nature could have happened without my Knowledge and Participation. Why, that's the very Reason for my Disbelief, replies the worthy Gentleman, nor will I give Way to any Surmises to your Prejudice: Go on, young Man, to deserve my Esteem, and to pursue Maxims of Virtue and Prudence, which will not fail of endearing you to all good Men, and establish a Peace and Harmony of Mind, that no Accident, in future Life, will have the Power to destroy: He then gave us both some excellent Lessons of Advice; and, after leaving Orders relative to Business, returned to his Country-House. When he was gone, I took my generous Friend in my Arms, and was so over-

come

come with this Testimony of his Goodness and Affection, that I even shed Tears, which flowed from the purest Gratitude: He accepted my Acknowledgments with a becoming Reluctancy, and assured me nothing should ever destroy his Regard for me, which he hoped in Time would entirely help to separate me from those Haunts, and those Friendships, that would not fail of being my Undoing.

I became now more circumspective in my Conduct, and kept very regular Hours, and found a greater Relish for the Society of my Friend, who did and said every Thing he could to engage me to put a Confidence in him and disclose my Situation. Gratitude, that inherent Principle of a worthy Breast, kept me steady to my Duty; nothing could ever rob me of that amiable Incentive, which still directed my Actions in a faint and concealed Degree in my worst Lapses; nay, this very Principle engaged me the first Opportunity I had to call upon *Prig*, who now kept Chambers in *New Inn*, to repay my Obligation to him. He recollected it next Morning; so, in balancing Accounts, I paid him thirty Shillings, which were due to him, and was overpersuaded to go with him to *Chelsea*, upon a Party of Pleasure, of which he assured me only two other male Friends would partake. We spent the Evening there in high Glee, and did not set out for *London* till near Midnight, and  
were

were gaily discoursing along the first of the five Fields, when we overheard several Blows given, accompanied with Oaths and Curses, and a Voice which methought I was well acquainted with, calling out for Help and Assistance. Our two Friends, immediately concluding it was somebody attacked by Robbers, crying out, It will be our Turn next, and so the Devil take the hindmost, run away; but, encouraging *Prig*, I told him, I was resolved to see what was the Matter; in which he seconded me, for a Want of Courage was not one of his Foibles. I was induced to this Rashness by the Sound of the Voice, which again and again was repeated, and, how improbable soever it appeared, I could not for my Soul conceive it to be other than that of my dear Friend *Diaper*. I was armed with a large Oak-stick, and *Prig* had a Sword by his Side, which not being skilled in the Use of, he put into my Hand, and took the Cudgel in Exchange. We were some Time before we reached the Spot whence the Noise proceeded, which we no otherwise discovered, for it was dark as Pitch, than by a Challenge of, D— ye, who are you? Friends, What's the Matter, we replied; and, in Answer, a Pistol was snapped at us, which flashed in the Pan without any Explosion; by which Light discovering three Fellows, I lunged at the first with my Sword, and heard a Groan, after having with some Difficulty recovered it, and perceived

it was wet. *Prig* gave and received several Blows, when suddenly our Antagonists took to their Heels and fled; we thought it to no Purpose to pursue them, but enquired, if any one was there who had been ill used by the Villains? Nobody answered, and, groping about, I stumbled over a Man, who we made no Doubt was murdered, and were going back to the Town to get some Help, if peradventure any Signs of Life remained; when a Groan or two, and a Struggle, as if from Throttling, proceeded from the Corpse: We then determined to bear him between us, as it was not above two Fields off, rather than delay Assistance till our Return: Accordingly we, in about half an Hour, brought him to a Public house; but oh, good God! what where my Grievs, when, upon bringing him into the Light, we discovered it to be Mr. *Diaper*, my excellent Friend, Streams of Blood running in plentiful Currents down his Face and Bosom. Leaving him in the Care of *Prig* and the Landlord and Landlady, I ran with all Haste imaginable for a Surgeon, and luckily found one at Home, and upon Coming back he had recovered his Senses, to my very great Joy. He fixed his Eyes upon us, and just reached out his Hand to me, which I took and bathed with my Tears, but could not utter a Syllable. On searching for his Wounds, the Surgeon found none dangerous, the great Flux of Blood proceeding from his Head, which was  
cut

cut in several Places as with a Hanger, but slantways; and several Contusions he had received on his Shoulders, Breast, and Sides. We asked, if it would be improper to remove him so far as his own House? But the Surgeon apprehending no Danger in it, and he signifying his Desire, having just recovered his Voice, to be removed there, we procured a Sedan from my Lord ——'s, and brought him safe into the City, myself, *Prig*, and two or three Men we had hired, serving as a Guard. His Wounds were dressed at *Chelsea*, and therefore, without any Delay, we got him into a warm Bed, which, with the Motion he had just received by the Chair, soon brought him to the perfect Use of his Faculties. It is impossible to describe his grateful Returns for the Succour we had afforded him, and the Embraces he bestowed upon me in Particular; for my Part, I thought it the most happy and providential Accident that ever befel me, for no Manner of Doubt could have been made, that these Robbers intended to butcher him, being irritated by a stout Resistance which he had made till overcome by Numbers, having a great Charge about him; it coming into his Head that Evening to call on a Customer at *Chelsea*, where he had been induced to stay so late, after having received a large Bill, by the pressing Sollicitations of his kind Host. This Affair could not be concealed from my Master and his Mother, who hurried up

to Town frightened out of their Wits at the News of their Son's Disaster; but, when they understood how wonderfully Providence had interposed in his Safety and Deliverance, they were all Admiration; they embraced me, and my Master told me, this Circumstance had so encreased his Value for me, that he loved me little less than his own Son, whom I had so bravely and so like a true Friend rescued from Destruction. Their Acknowledgments to *Prig* were unbounded, who was greatly delighted; which gave me more Esteem for him than ever, at the Service he had rendered this worthy Family.

The next Day we saw an Account in the Paper of this Robbery, and that a Man was found dead in the Field, who had received his mortal Wound by the Thrust of a Sword; upon which my Master went with Mr. *Prig* to see if they could make any Discovery; but returned without any other Satisfaction that that this must be the Man whom I had run through the Body. My Friend had only lost five Guineas and some Silver out of his left Breeches-pocket, our seasonable Interposing having saved the Money he had received, amounting to near an Hundred and Fifty Pounds. I was with him almost continually, and his Friendship to me was so increased, that he was never happy, when I was absent.

## C H A P. XV.

*Discourse between him and young Diaper.—  
They are tricked by Gamblers.—He borrows  
Money.—Is scurvily used by Speculist.—  
A Discovery, which surprises him.*

AS soon as my Friend was tolerably well, his Father, willing to give him an Opportunity for a little Recreation, staid some Time in Town, and permitted us to take what innocent Diversions we had an Inclination to; amongst others, we frequently took Excursions on Foot, into the Country, without determining upon any particular Rout, sometimes rambling in one Direction, over Hedge and Ditch, and sometimes in another, entertained with the Profusion of Sweets that Nature had bestowed on the Fields and Meads, with such a liberal Hand, and the variegated Beauties of the Season. It was in these Walks that I unboomed myself to this excellent Youth, and gave him a Detail of all my Follies, from my first Stepping aside from Virtue to the present Time. He helped me to make many useful Reflections on the Vanity and fatal Consequences of such a rakish and abandoned Course of Life; but, my *Jory*, says he, one Day, you won't be surpris'd, when I acquaint you, that I knew most of these Particulars



long ago ; but dissembled my Knowledge of them, depending, that, one Time or other, your good Sense would get the upper Hand of your Foibles, which, if they had met with Opposition or Upbraidings, would perhaps have only been strengthened by it. *Packer* was so great a Villain, as to betray your Intercourse with *Nanny*, very much to your Disadvantage, without making any Mention of himself ;—but only as a Matter of his Observation. I despised his malicious Insinuations, for such I judged they were ; but was concerned for your Situation. As to other Matters in your Conduct, I have gathered them from your own Behaviour, your Shunning my Company, the Embarrassment you was generally under ; but more particularly the Company you kept easily let me into the Manner of your spending your Time, and the Nature of your Diversions : But tell me now sincerely, my Friend, was not your generous Temper shocked at the Idea of being involved in a Course of Life that was absolutely contradictory to your own sober Thinking, and put you to the Necessity of making Concealments, and acting under a Cloud in every Thing ? I am amazed, for my Part, when I reflect upon your Difficulties and the Breaches you must make in Truth, in order to keep up Appearances ; which Endeavour is a plain Proof that you were sensible you was carrying on Schemes directly opposite to the received Opinions of Mankind, and those De-

corums

corums that the most Profligate are willing to comply with for their own Sakes, and to avoid public Censure and Reproach. Indeed, Sir, I replied, you are making a very just Judgment of my Situation, and nothing could be more miserable; my depraved Appetites bore down my Reason, and a Habit of pursuing false Pleasure intoxicated me to such a Degree, that it made a Moment's Reflection uneasy. Unhappy is that Man, who bears about him a thorough Conviction of what is regular and fit, and, at the same Time, transgresses against his Knowledge, and even the Bent of his natural Disposition! I perceived I was affronting myself in every Thing I did, and yet so powerful was Passion, and overbearing Appetite, that I had it not in my Power to stem the Torrent of Vice that flowed in on every Side. Alas! my dear Friend, you are not acquainted with the Hell such a Man carries about him, ever resolving to forsake his Ways, and yet every Moment more and more entangled. I believe I should have forsaken my Follies very often, upon the Pain the various Disasters and Scrapes they brought me into occasioned; but there a Kind of Pride opposed me: No, I cried, if I return to Virtue by such a Chagrine, I have no Merit in it; I ought not to give her a Triumph from the Ills her Enemy brings upon me, but for her own Sake, and giving her the Honour of making a Conquest over my Soul, by the Force of her pure and undis-

sembled Charms, without the Inducements of Sor-  
 row, Pain, or Ill-nature, I felt in transgressing her  
 Precepts. By this Time we had entered the Town,  
 which broke off our Discourse. We were going thro'  
*Old-Street*, when a Quarrel between three or four  
 well dressed Men engaged our Attention; one of  
 them, in Particular, seemed to look like a respon-  
 sible Tradesman, and had abundant Gravity and  
 Seriousness in his Countenance; who seemed to  
 regard us with a great deal of Curiosity, ever and  
 anon casting his Eyes at us with a Kind of eager  
 Penetration. His Antagonists soon left him, before  
 we could gather the Meaning of the Dispute, and  
 went into a Public house in the Neighbourhood,  
 whilst he addressed his Discourse to us seemingly  
 in a very great Ferment. Gentlemen, says he,  
 you look like Men of Honour; I know you, Mr.  
*Diaper*, and have a great Friendship for your Fa-  
 ther; these Villains, I can call them no better,  
 have inveigled me into a Game at Cards, and have  
 stripped me of seven or eight Guineas; I am sure  
 they could not win it fairly: I can't imagine what  
 could rob me of my Senses so much as to engage with  
 them, and I can't prevail upon the Man of the  
 House to fetch a Constable, otherwise I would see  
 to the Bottom of their Roguery, and punish them  
 for the Good of other unwary People that may  
 chance to fall in their Way; there's a Nest of  
 them I believe that infest all Parts of the Town:

I wish,

I wish, Gentlemen, says he, in a half Whisper, you would step in to them and engage them to stay till I return with an Officer; here is a couple of Guineas, please to take it, Sir, and whatever you lose more, in the mean Time, to detain them, I will return it you again; the Good of the Public I would buy at any Price: It was impossible to refuse him this Favour, he pressed us so closely, and we had a Curiosity likewise to see the Tricks of this Sort of Folks, of whom we heard every Day such odd Accounts; and, accordingly, begging him not to stay long, because our Time was precious, we went into the House, We found them railing against our Employer in the bitterest Terms; one said, he was a Presbyterian Parson; no, damn the preaching Puppy, says another, he is an Oilman in *Cheapside*, and a devilish rich Fellow; let him be what he will, says a Third, he deserves to be punished for charging Gentlemen with unfair Practices, who are as good Men as himself, and then went on to tell us a long Story of the Games they had plaid; after which, they said, one and all, that they would go: What signifies staying, Mr. *Bishop*, says one to another, it is late in the Evening now, without you will play a Rubber or two at Cribbage? What do you say, Gentlemen, shall we make Four? We assented, and it came to our Lot to be Partners; we played three or four Games and won, at which they seemed to be wonderously vexed, and then Fortune

changed unperceivably, and we not only lost the good Man's two Guineas, but two more to it, which chagrined us so, that we set in Earnest to take our Revenge; but it was all the same, we lost a Guinea and an Half more; when one of them, getting up, seemed to recollect a Piece of Business he had forgot, and said, he could stay no longer, but would return again in half an Hour; however, he did not come in an Hour; and, the old Gentleman not returning, we grew impatient, and more so when, maugre all our Intreaties, the rest brushed off one after another. The Landlord then accosted us, and asked us, Gentlemen, do you know what a Set of People you have been conversing with? We told him, Yes, and the Reason why we engaged with them; at which he could not forbear bursting into a loud Laughter, and told us, that grave Person was one of the Gang, and, no doubt, had at once contrived this Scheme to take us in. It is impossible to express our Spleen at this News; we were almost ready to accuse one another, and fell upon the Man of the House for not giving us an Hint sooner: Lack-a-day, Sir, says he, if they were to discover me in giving any such Intelligence, I should be murdered; they are the closest and most impudent Gang of Villains in the World, and appear in all Disguises. We had no Remedy, and went Home full of Displeasure, tho' we could not help smiling at the Trick that had been

been

been played us. Nobody can guard too much against sudden Prepossessions in a Man's Favour, as the World is at present situated, for such People make it their Business to know every body, Witness this Fellow's Pretences to Acquaintance with my Master, which was what most deceived us; the Quarrel had only been a Sham to draw some unwary Person into their Company, and the Sight of us directed him to this Expedient. We could not help telling Mr. *Diaper*, when we came Home, of this Adventure, at which he was highly diverted, and took Occasion to caution us against the Tricks of the Town, which are every Day put in Practice.

I now quite lost my Inclination to the Life I had led, and seriously applied myself to Business, seldom stirring out, except now and then to meet *Speculist* and *Prig*, with whom I still kept up a Correspondence; but I was harrassed incessantly with Duns, my late Extravagancies having left nothing in the Hands of Mr. *Deacon*, whom I had so disoblged also, by refraining from visiting him, that I had not the Face to ask him to advance Money, before it was due. My Shoe-maker, Taylor, nay, even my Shoe-blacker, became importunate, so that I was forced to undergo the Drudgery of promising, this Time and that Time, and t'other, to pay them, without a Possibility of performing my Engagements; which, as they thought I ne-

ver wanted Money, they interpreted much to my Disadvantage. It would be full half a Year, before I could receive any Part of my Stipend, and I did not care to expose my Wants to my Friend : What to do to release myself from these Vexations I could not tell, and was forced to borrow Sum after Sum of *Speculist* and *Prig*, which they began to grow uneasy about : Nay, at Times I borrowed of others of my Acquaintance, so that I was hardly able to shew my Head. In this Dilemma I called on *Speculist*, who I always thought had a peculiar Value for me, and, knowing he did not want Money, laid my Trouble before him, and desired him to let me have as much as would satisfy my other Creditors, upon giving him a Draught upon Mr. *Deacon*, for my yearly Allowance as fast as it became due ; but, how was I astonished, when he broke out into this Speech : Look ye, Mr. *Thompson*, I don't care to trust you any farther, and can't imagine what you do with your Money ; for my Part, I have no more than is necessary for my own Occasions, and can't supply you any longer, nor do I desire any more of your Company : I have fallen under a great deal of Censure already, by conversing with young Fellows that are not at their own Hands, and I have lost Money by that Scoundrel *Prim*, who is now gone Clerk to the Captain of an *East-Indiaman*, and I believe will never have the Honesty to repay me a Farthing ;

Farthing; you should apply to your Relations I think; here, interrupting him, I told him, I was sorry that I had put it into his Power to make me these Reproaches, tho' I was glad thereby I had discovered his Temper; which would give me a greater Surfeit of the Ways he had introduced me to, and been a constant Partaker of with me, than the most heightened Eloquence that could be employed: I put him in Mind of that universal Benevolence and Kindness he was always inculcating; tho' I was a Fool to regard it or think it sincere, as, before now, I might have observed him contradict it in all his Actions, had I not been totally blind: I find, Mr. *Speculist*, I added, you can perceive the Beauty of a right Behaviour, when exercised towards yourself, but not when it is required of you, or puts you to any Pains or Expences; and am now thoroughly convinced of the Usefulness and beautiful Instruction conveyed in these Words, by the Son of Sirach, "*If thou wouldst get a Friend, prove him first, and be not hasty to credit him: For some Man is a Friend for his own Occasion, and will not abide in the Day of thy Trouble. And there is a Friend, who, being turned to Enmity and Strife, will discover thy Reproach. If thou be brought low, he will be against thee, and hide himself from thy Face.*" Indeed, could I expect any other, when ours was a Friendship like a *Conspiracy in Vice, and Leagues*  
of



of Pleasure, as Mr. *Addison* says? He was struck dumb with this just Retaliation upon him, and I left him with all the Marks of Fury in his Countenance. I must own I was shocked at the Insolence of this Man, and his Usage of poor *Prim*, who, by the bye, I knew, owed him little or nothing, shewed him to me in his proper Colours. I was resolved to avoid such Companions for the Future, and was returning Home, deeply involved in Self-accusation, when a tumultuous Uproar, at the Corner of a Street I was to pass thro', made a Stop, and I discovered the Occasion to be, that a Woman had been detected in picking a Pocket, and was put into the Hands of the Mob for due Discipline: She was cleanly dressed, and betrayed Tokens of the greatest Fear and Terror; but my Eyes had no sooner fastened upon her, than I recollected the very Features of the *Quondam* Mrs. *Fripsey*, who had served me such a foul Trick in my Return from *Vauxhall*. As my Resentment had long subsided, I regarded her as an Object of Compassion, and would have prevailed on the People to carry her before a Magistrate; but the Prosecutor could not be found, and therefore it was in vain to plead for Mercy, and she was severely ducked in the Horse-pond of a neighbouring Inn, and then turned adrift in a most uncomfortable Condition. I marked which Way she went, and followed her for near half an Hour, till the poor Wretch got in-

to the Fields, with an Intent to dry her Cloaths, and then hipped after her: She turned about, but no sooner discovered me, than she gave a Shrick, and was making all the Haste to run from me; but I overtook her, and telling her, I meant her no Harm, she became tolerably calm: I told her, she might well fear the Consequences of my seeing her, but, as I had just seen her punished for another Crime, I would wave my Resentment, if she would let me know where to get my Cane again, which I very much valued. She wept and thanked me, but assured me it had been sold with my other Things by her male Accomplices, she knew not where. I then laid before her her vile and wretched Manner of Life, and the Consequences it would in the End produce, with which she seemed affected, and, giving her a small Piece of Money, was going away; but she begged me to stay a Minute or two, for she had somewhat to impart to me that might be of Service. The Villain, Sir, that passed for my Husband, and robbed you that Night I was in the Coach with you, is dead; he was run thro' the Body by some Gentlemen who came up to the Rescue of another he had attacked in a Field near *Chelsea*. How! says I, is what you say true? Yes, Sir, she replied, somewhat alarmed at my Starting, he was, I assure you: I was unhappily ruined by that Man, who brought me, thro' a Series of Misfortunes and Distress, to aid him in his wicked.

wicked Courses; he was at *Vauxhall*, during the whole Time of our Conversation there, and the Coach I called was driven by a Fellow of the Gang, who plied for the Purpose of assisting us in any such Attempt as that I made on you. But what I want to inform you is this, Sir, that the Gentleman, who was robbed at *Chelsea*, is a great Linnen-Draper in the City, with whom you live at this Time; for this Knowledge I gathered by seeing you both at the Shop-door together the Night before the Robbery, and I wanted then an Opportunity to discover the Design to you; for a Design it was, and the Fellows had their Intelligence of his going to *Chelsea*, from a Man who is lately become a Partner in their Rogueries, who lived as a Journeyman with your Master, and has the greatest Inveteracy against you all three, for what Reason I never could learn. Since Yesterday Morning, I have been quite abandoned to Wretchedness, and the Crime, you saw me so roughly handled for, I was induced to commit thro' mere Want of Bread. Your Generosity and Goodness, Sir, I hope will make me a true Convert, and, if Heaven is so gracious as to accept my Repentance, I am resolved to work my Fingers to the Bones, rather than ever expose myself to such Vileness and Wickedness as I have too long been subject to and Partaker of. Here she wept aloud, and moved my Compassion so much, that I gave her Half-a-Guinea, which  
was

was the whole that I had about me, advising her to cherish these Motions of returning Goodness, and telling her, that if ever I saw her again, and was Witness to a Reformation and industrious Honesty in her, I would be her Friend.

I could not help adoring the Justice of Providence, in making Use of my Arm to execute Vengeance upon the Villain who had so ill used me; and my Indignation against *Packer*, who had received so many Favours from the Person he was thus endeavouring to murder and destroy, was excessive: I remembered he knew of the Money that was owing us at *Chelsea*, and if I had gone for it, no doubt, the Favour received by my Friend was intended also to me. So many Instances of the Vileness and Corruption of human Nature made me quite melancholy, and I returned Home in an Astonishment and profound Thoughtfulness, that was immediately taken Notice of by my Friend, to whom I imparted the Occasion. He was past Measure affected with the Discoveries I had made, and, as we did not know what farther Mischiefs *Packer*, as he knew the Secrets of the Family, and the Nature of our Trade, might endeavour to do, we resolved to be very circumspect for the Future in every Thing we undertook, and to keep it a Secret from my Master, for Fear of giving him any Disturbance.

## C H A P. XVI.

*Speculift waits upon Mr. Diaper, who reproves Thompson.—He confesses his Folly.—Is pardoned.—Excellent Behaviour of his Master.—Permitted to visit his Father and Mother, with his Friend.—They set out on their Journey.*

**I** Found it was now absolutely necessary for me to regain the Confidence and Esteem of Mr. Deacon, in order to get rid of my troublesome Visitants, for which Purpose I more frequently went to see him; and, as he was really a very sensible and understanding Man, reaped a great deal of Benefit from his Conversation, and had almost defaced the bad Opinion he had conceived of me, when the Malice or Vanity of *Speculift* at once made a Discovery of my untoward Situation. He bore my late Rejoinder to his Discourse very hardly, and fired with Resentment at my consequent Estrangement from him; for what he had said, of not desiring my Company, was only one of those Airs he gave himself with those Acquaintances over whom he acquired a Superiority; resolved to be revenged, and therefore this Man of Reason and Philosophy, who was not quite unknown to my Master, one Day paid him a Visit, at which he seemed very much surpris'd, as he had never conversed with him, not

at all liking his Character. He soon put him out of his Uncertainty of his Design, by acquainting him, he came, out of pure Compassion to Mr. *Thompson*, to let him know, that he was fearful he had taken some bad Courses, and kept Company with Persons who would do him much Disservice; and then gave him a Detail of those little Follies I had been guilty of, the Necessities he knew I was driven to, and an Account of the Debt I had contracted with him; concluding, that he gave him the present Trouble, out of pure Good-will to the young Gentleman, not doubting but he would exert his Authority and Influence over me, to engage me to forsake such Practices for the Future. The good Man was quite surpris'd at this Account of me, and, as he had heard me mention Mr. *Speculist*, as an ingenious Gentleman, and one I greatly respected, saw, thro' the Appearance of Friendship he put on, the Rancour of his Heart, and, without any Emotion, gravely asked him, What it was I owed him? And, upon hearing it was only twelve Pounds, counted him out the Money, took his Receipt, and begged the Favour of him to depart the House; which he did with the utmost Precipitancy and Shame, which was the more increased by his meeting me full-butt at the Bottom of the Stair-case. He just moved his Hat and went away, leaving me in Amaze at seeing him in our House, where

where he had never been before, and many Conjectures about his Business there.

The next Morning, my Friend and myself were both sent for into my Master's Chamber, who, after shutting the Door, accosted us in the following Manner: My dear Children, for I can't prevail upon myself to consider either of you in any other Light, I have observed, with an unmeasurable Satisfaction, your strict Union, ever since you have been together; your Tempers, your Actions, and the Regard you have paid to me and my Wife; and your studying my Welfare with so much Care, in the Management of my Business, has charmed me, and my Mind has made me happy in the Contemplation of your Virtues. You, Mr. *Thompson*, particularly, because bound only to me by the weak Tie of Obedience: I hope I have given you convincing Proofs by my Behaviour to you, that I resent your Fidelity and Attachment in the tenderest Manner. What will you, then, what can I say to a Man who has endeavoured to persuade me, with a fond Officiousness to bear ungrateful Tidings, that you have followed Courses that I must highly disapprove; have neglected my Concerns, which you, Son, have connived at; have frequented the Company of lewd Women, and wild young Fellows, whose only Aim and Study is the Gratification of their debauched Imaginations and depraved Passions? I must own, I treated him with  
the

the Contempt he deserved, as I could see, thro' his Mask of Friendship and Concern, an Inveteracy which all the Shew of impartial Representation could not hide; nor had I believed any Thing against you, if he had not at the same Time convinced me of something which grieves me greatly; he says, you have been extravagant, and are in Debt, and, as a Proof of it, declared you was indebted to him. I gave him no Encouragement to pursue his Animadversions, but have paid him the Money for you; see, there is his Receipt, and by that you will know the Author of what I tell you. Now I must own, if you are driven to such Necessities, it would almost lead me to think all the rest of his Charge was true; for I am sensible your Father supplies you with every Thing necessary, and more Pocket-money than I should care to trust a Youth with. I am not angry, Child, and only beg you to let me know your Embarrassments, that you may be relieved, and not tempted to do any Thing unbecoming a Youth I so greatly esteem, and the Son of a worthy and dear Friend: I am sensible what Temptations surround us on every Side, at your Age, and make all the Allowances for human Frailty that I possibly can. Here he paused, whilst the Tears ran down my Cheeks, and I was for some Time incapable of answering: At length, recovering myself, I thanked him for all his Kindnesses and constant Goodness to me, and told



told him, I should be inexcusable not to make a sincere Confession of all my Follies, which I hoped were not of so heinous a Nature as not to be pardoned upon a sincere Amendment, as he had expressed such a Regard for my Welfare, and it was the only Means left me to return to my former Innocence and Tranquillity. I then gave him a short Detail of all my Errors and Slips of Youth, not without mingling my Tale with conscious Blushes and Motions of Shame and Regret, which often interrupted my Discourse; and now, dear Sir, I cried, falling on my Knees, and kissing his Hand, with a fervent Action of Affection, I have given you an Account of the Crimes I have been guilty of, let me intreat you not to hate me, but let me plead with you for Forgiveness and Compassion; I hope it is not too late to recover my Mind from those Vices, which I have now a thorough Detestation of; I have for some Time forsaken these Resorts of Wickedness, and feel the highest Pleasure on the Approaches I make again to that Peace and Happiness I have for so long a Time lost. Deprive me not of the Society of my dear Friend, and the Comfort I have ever received in your good Opinion; I will be doubly diligent, the Remainder of my Time, to make you amends for my repeated Neglects: Your Goodness gives me a Thousand nameless Compunctions, may Heaven enable me to deserve it, the Remainder of my Life! I could say no more, and a Flood of  
I
moving

moving Sorrow put a Period to my Discourse. My Friend mingled his Concern with mine, and said every Thing that could disarm any Resentment that might arise in his Father's Breast. He stood for some Time thoughtful, at length he softened, and a Tear of Mercy stole down his venerable Face, and, raising me up, he embraced me with eager Pressures, then took his Son into his Arms, and kindly told us, he forgave me every Thing. Words can't describe the Gratitude that arose in my Breast, and quite overcame me; I made no Answer, but embraced his Knees; he saw my Condition, and left us to come to ourselves. How much relieved I was after the Disclosure of my Crimes, and the Pardon I received, no one can tell; had the Weight of a Mountain oppressed me, its Removal could not have given me more real Ease. My Friend pressed me to his Bosom, and gave me the highest Congratulations; I returned his Caresses, and was ready to devour him with my Acknowledgements for his Goodness. A few Minutes afterwards my Master returned; think yourself happy, Mr. *Thompson*, says he, that you have been obliged to make this Confession, and that you are relieved from the Gloom that was occasioned by the Concealment of your Condition: I congratulate myself for seeing your Return to Virtue, almost as soon as I knew of your Defection: Let me intreat you to apply for Pardon to the Author of our Being, whom you

have

have highly offended by ungratefully misemploying those excellent Talents and Abilities he has bestowed upon you; let him have all the Praise for this happy Turn of your Affairs; at the Throne of his Mercy be constant in your Petitions, for his Grace and Favour to support you in the Resolutions you have taken to act agreeable to his Laws, his pure Injunctions; resume your good Humour and your Endeavours to please and oblige every body you are concerned with, and, by a thorough Adherence to Religion and Virtue; you will be happy yourself, and bless all your Friends: Let me have an Account of all your Debts, which I will instantly discharge; and, rather than afflict your good Father with the Knowledge of what is past, I will wait till you are in a Capacity to pay me again. 'Tis necessary to relieve you from such a Burthen to a generous Mind, that you may have nothing left to impede you in your revived Disposition to Happiness; and, as you may have contracted some Acquaintance you can't handsomely part from abruptly, I have been thinking to indulge you with the Liberty of taking a Journey into *Yorkshire*, for a Month or two, to see your Parents; and, as my Wife is able to bear the Town better than she has been for some Time past, my Son, if he pleases, shall accompany you; your Father has often pressed me to let him come down to see him, and he shall take this Opportunity:

Therefore

Therefore finish what Business you have in Hand, Gentlemen; you are welcome to my Horses, and may set out when you will; your Father and Mother long to see you; and it is Time to gratify their Desire, after an Absence of four Years and an Half: If I want you in Town sooner than I have mentioned, I'll write you Word: When you come back, you will be a Stranger to the People you would avoid, and may then keep them at a proper Distance: Here's a small Token of my Respect, which you will accept of for the Expences of your Journey: In so saying, he clapped a Paper into each of our Hands, containing twenty Guineas, and left me in Extasy of Admiration and Acknowledgment for his Goodness and Condescension. My Friend was transported with the Thoughts of our going together; and, as for my Part, I had never experienced so much Delight before. In about a Week after, having settled our Books, and left all Affairs ready to my Master's Hands, we set out on our Journey, taking Leave of him and my Mistress, who overwhelmed me, as well as her Son, with the kindest Expressions of Regard.

such a Journey for many Years, was quite captivated with the new Pleasures we tasted; and we kept up a Chearfulness and good Humour, which was but bare Gratitude for the Enjoyments we received.

About Noon on the third Day of our Peregrination, we overtook a Chaise and Pair, followed by a Number of Domesticks, in a Livery that methought I had somewhere particularly noticed before; but when we had passed, and I just turned my Head back to look at the Persons in the Vehicle, how agreeably pleased I was to discover the same amiable Gentleman and Lady, whose Conversation had captivated me so much at *Vauxhall*? They knew me also, at once, and both seemed transported at the lucky Meeting: After the first Civilities had passed between us, I was gently chid for not having performed my Promise of calling to see them, which I excused in as handsome a Manner as I could: Then they enquired our Rout, which happened to be thro' that Part of the Country they were proceeding to, to their Country-House, where they insisted that we should accompany them, and spend a Day or two, which we could by no Means refuse. We arrived there the same Evening, and were introduced to a genteel and commodious House, which, for Situation and Accommodations, was one of the prettiest and completest Villa's, that ever I saw in my Life. My  
Com-

Companion, as well myself, was charmed with our Reception, which was as cordial and respectful as could be given to the most valuable Friends. The good Sense and Oeconomy of the Master and Mistress was visible in the contented and easy Looks of the Servants, and the excellent Management and Order that appeared in the minutest Things: Plenty without Waste, or Profusion, was seen at the Table; and every Thing wore an Air of the most refined Elegancy: They were received at their Entrance by a young Lady, Sister to the Gentleman, who was a Representation of *Piera*; an innocent Sweetness shone in her Countenance, and the ruddy Morn was not arrayed with more inspiring, blooming Graces: She also accosted us with a courteous and inviting Look, that you could not help feeling to the Bottom of the Heart. At Supper we were entertained with a Repast, that spoke the noble Temper of our Host; and a Conversation ensued, in which every one bore such a Share, as gave a mutual good Opinion of each other. We did not retire to Bed till pretty late, and were conducted to a very grand Apartment, where we were taken up some Time in our Admiration of our new Acquaintance. My Friend was curious to know how I came to be known to Mr. *Bellair* and his Spouse; for that was his Name, in which I gratified him; he then ran out, in excessive Encomiums on the Beauties and Perfections

of Miss *Sukry*, by which I could plainly perceive his very Soul began to be infected with her Charms ; which Discovery not a little pleased me, as I had before observed an Insensibility to the Fair Sex in him, that very much surprised me : The whole Night he tossed and tumbled about, and every now and then a Sigh escaped him, as by Stealth ; upon which, the next Morning, I rallied him very severely. What signifies denying any Thing to you, *Joe*, says he, very seriously ; I must confess that little *Cberubim* has made me uncommonly uneasy ; and I would give the World, if I had it, for a Companion for Life, of such a distinguished Merit as I observed in that dear Creature. He uttered these Words in such a Tone and Manner that I could not help repeating my Mirth at his Expence ; at which he grew a little angry, and forced me to desist ; after which we commenced a very earnest Discourse about the Family, and agreed to make all the Observations we could of the Circumstances and Disposition of the young Lady, without whom he protested he could not think of living. Our Consultations were finished by a Servant's entering with a Message, that Breakfast was ready ; and we, immediately obeying the Summons, found Mr. *Bellair* and the two Ladies, who were very merry at our over-sleeping ourselves in such a lovely Morning ; which, Miss observed, was being a little ungrateful for the Pleasure it bestowed

upon

upon us: Breakfast over, a Walk was proposed in the Garden, which was a very extensive one; and at the further Extremity of it was a very fine Fishpond, with an Aldove for the Anglers to repose themselves, and a Bank of green Turf all round it. This Diversion, you must know, Gentlemen, says Mr. *Bellair*, is a very favourite one with me, and my Wife and Sister, as we can pursue it, and yet indulge our Contemplations, and impart them to each other: But I assure you that Miss is the best Sportsman, by far, and not a present Inhabitant of the scaly Ery but has been, one Time or other, upon her Hook; tho', like the Method of the Generality of Ladies in treating those Lovers, who only serve to make up the Number of their Conquests, after trifling with them some Time, she gives them their Liberty again. If Miss, Sir, says my Friend, were to torture her Lovers in that Manner, I apprehend it would never be in her Power to restore the Blessings you mention again to them, and they would be too fond of their Slavery to desire it. At this she blushed, and, to turn off the Discourse, proposed sending for the Fishing-Rods, to try our Skill. We had all of us some Sport, but my Friend, who was so fixed on the Actions of the young Lady, and so attentive to the Indulgence of his infant Passion, that he did not catch one; upon which she merely told him, she would take Care to provide a Dinner for them



both. The Words were scarce out of her Mouth, when, leaning too forward, the Edge of the Bank gave Way under her, and she fell at once into the Water, which was pretty deep. We were all terribly frightened; but, as to Mr. *Diaper*, he gave a great Cry, and immediately plunged into the Pond, and brought her out in his Arms, all wet, and faint with Terror. The Time was so short, that she preserved her Senses; however, it put an End to our Diversion, and we attended her into the House, where she was undressed, and put to Bed. Her Brother and Sister were so struck with this Action of my Friend's, that they were never tired with acknowledging it; and, as to him, he exulted to himself in the Instance he had given of his regard, and betrayed his Concern, by enquiring of her Health, every Minute, in a Manner almost troublesome. He was equipped in a Suit of Mr. *Bellair's*, till his own were dry; and that Gentleman, clapping him on the Shoulder, told him, merrily, he was fearful that the Water, instead of cooling him, had inflamed him so, that it would not be easily extinguishable; What say you, Mr. *Thompson*? Your Friend won't be much hurt by a fine Woman and three thousand Pounds, and I'll promise him my Consent, I assure him. Mr. *Diaper* bowed, and was so confused at this frank Discovery and Good-nature, that he had nothing wherewith to reply. Dinner was served up, at which  
the

the young Lady, now quite well, attended; but I could perceive such a Confusion, whenever her Eyes met those of her Preserver, to whom she expressed a high Sense of her Obligation, that I made no Question but she was as sensible as himself, and gave myself a great Pleasure in the Reflection. We stayed in this happy Mansion a full Week, during which Mr. *Diaper* made a great Progress in his Amour, and Miss *Sutey* seemed quite affected with his Passion; they were ever together, and Mr. *Bellair*, being made sensible, by me, of his Condition and Expectations, was heartily disposed to give him all the Liberty with his Mistress that was possible. We could hardly separate ourselves from the Family, and, I believe, *Diaper* would have been contented, if I had gone the Remainder of the Journey alone, if Shame had permitted him; we parted, however, promising to spend a Week at our Return; and the Parting of the Lovers was so tender, that Miss could not leave her Chamber, to see us mount, her Discomposure was so great.

Never was Man so transformed as was the young Gentleman; he was constantly musing; had lost his Vivacity; would heave now and then an involuntary Sigh; and it was seldom I could get a Word from him in the whole Day's Ride, except I put him upon talking of his Mistress; and then what Raptures would break forth! How many Vows and Protestations of eternal Constancy and

Truth! He let me into the Whole of his Courtship, and I found, to my extreme Delight, that he had Reason really to esteem himself very happy; and therefore, after canvassing the Matter between us, it was resolved he should ask his Father's Consent to the Match, soon after our Return. We put up at Night at a very good Inn, which was so full of Guests, that we could get no other Place to sit in, all the Rooms being taken up, but the Kitchen. As my Friend did not chuse to mix in any promiscuous Company, and there was not another House of a long Way, we were contented, and ordered a Fowl to be laid to the Fire, for our Supper, which was immediately complied with.

---

## C H A P. XVIII.

*Story of the enchanted Bridle.—Midnight Adventures in the Inn.—Discourse between Dr. Talisman, Parson Zealot, and Gage, the Exciseman.—Fatal Consequences of their Dispute.—They arrive at Mr. Thompson's.—Joy at their Arrival.*

THE Company in the Kitchen, principally composed of the Servants of the Guests who had put up in the Inn, withdrew from the Fire, in respect to our Appearance; so that we were  
not

not at all incommoded at our Supper; but rather entertained with the different Characters we could over-hear them give their several Masters and Mistresses, with whom, as usual with the Party-coloured Gentry, they made very free. We ordered our Beds to be made ready, whilst we drank a Glass or two after our Meal; and were just adjourning to our Chamber, when a young Fellow broke into the Kitchen, in the greatest Hurry and Confusion imaginable; his Hair erected on his Head, like the Quills of a Porcupine; his Body full of convulsive Motions; his Face pale and distorted; his Eyes fixed in their Sockets; and all the Marks of dreadful Fright and Amaze; which robbed him of Utterance; and, just as he advanced up to the Fire, he gave a deep Groan, and fell down in a Swoon: Every body was surpris'd, and ran to help him, plentifully besprinkling his Face with Water; which, in a little Time, brought him to himself. He stared wildly about him, for some Time; and cried, in a hollow Tone of Voice, Is he gone? Is he gone? And then, getting up, took a Turn or two round the Kitchen, and hallooed out again, Avoid Satan! Oh God! save me! save me! Here he is! There he is! and so went on, that every body concluded him distracted; and the Hostess coming in, followed by her Husband, ordered them to lay Hands on him, for fear he should do any Mischief. This they did accordingly; and, after they had got

him down, he became somewhat calmer, whilst the Tears in Abundance trickled down his Cheeks, followed by oft repeated Sighs and Groans. Alack! says the Landlady, I knew some bad Luck would happen in our Family, by my Dream last Night; and, to be sure, a great Calf came bolt into the Bar-Room, this Morning, and frightened me out of my Wits! Well, poor Fellow, that old Jade, *Jenny Barnes*, has certainly bewitched him! Good God! it's a Shame such Devils should be suffered to live in the Parish. Hold your Tongue you foolish B——h, says her Husband, you are always canting some d——d Nonsense or other; more likely some of your Methodist Tricks have been put into his Head: Hold up your Head, *Jack*, What's the Matter? The Fellow was going to reply, when, moving himself in his Chair, he kicked the Bit of a Bridle with one of his Heels, which hung round his Neck, and reached the Pavement, which made a Kind of a Clink, and threw him into the same Extasies and Distortions again, continually roaring, There he is! Don't you hear his Chain? Oh Lord deliver me! Pray, dear Master, send for the Parson, I have seen the Devil! The Devil you have, says his Master; What Business had he in my Stables? No, no, replies the Man, all in a Foam, I saw him at *Black Jack's* Barn! there, turning himself about: Don't you hear him now? He's here! he's here! and swooned away again:

again: At this the Landlord looked about him, and, spying the Bridle, burst into an immoderate Fit of laughing: O, ho, says he, I have discovered the Whole; wake, you silly Son of a B—h; Don't you see that here's no Chain here, nor any Thing like it. It's only the Bit that makes this Rattling; and so gave him a Douse in the Chops, which recalled him once more to himself: Then turning to the Company told them that a Negro, that once lived with him, in Quality of an Hostler, had hanged himself in a Barn, at the Back of the House, and that ever since he had haunted that Barn, and had been seen by several People, dragging a huge Chain after him, which he always did at Twelve o'Clock at Night; and this Fellow, continues he, has, no doubt, seen him, or heard him; and, forgetting he had the Bridle at his Heels, by the Force of Imagination, thought he had pursued him quite into the House, I suppose; and so there's your Cock-and-a-Bull Story of a Dream, and a Calf, and *Jenny Barnes*; out, Madam; come, get up, and go to your Business. The Hostler now thoroughly convinced of his Mistake, endeavoured to get up, but was so weakened, that they were forced to convey him to Bed, leaving us in high Mirth, at such an Instance of vulgar Prepossession, and the Strength of Fancy. We soon after were conducted to our Repose, which this Accident had kept us from an Hour or two longer than we intended.

Our

Our Room opened into a long Gallery, which was the Means of Communication to a whole Tier of Apartments; at the upper End was the Convenience of a Privy for the Use of the whole Floor, and, by a very imprudent Want of Caution, the Doors of the Rooms were not furnished with Locks, but only depended on the Security of Latches. We had just began to dose, when we heard the Latch of our Apartment gently lifted up, and some-body softly stealing to our Bed-side; who, as he advanced, cried, Egod, *Tom*, I was a long Time before I could find my Way back again from that d—d Vault; I think they ought to have a Lamp burning in the Gallery, for it is cursed dark; What are ye asleep already? We made no Answer, and he went on: I have been thinking of our Expedition Tomorrow; but, by G—d, I don't think it safe to attempt the Coach or this Chariot, for they are too strongly guarded: Now, there's the two young Frigs, that supped in the Kitchen, seem to be flush of Money, and we had better set out betimes and secure them, for they go towards *York*, as the Landlord informed me, and he believes will be a good Booty: D—n me; why don't you Answer? Ha! you drank so damned hard last Night, that you are as drousy as the Devil. By this Time he was pulling up the Bed-Cloaths, when I stirred, and, as if between Sleep and Waking, cried out, Be quiet;—What—what d'ye want? The Mistake was soon perceived,

perceived, and a quick Retreat made from the Bed and out of the Door; upon which I gave a Jog to my Friend, and being too much concerned in the late Speech to be easy without some farther Discovery, I slipped out of Bed, and tripped softly after the Person who had made it, whom I soon traced to the next Door but one to ours; and finding him gone in, and the Door shut, applied my Ear to the Crevice, and heard him say,—*Tom*, are you there? Aye, says *Tom*, where have you been? Why, d—n me, I mistook the Room, and have been talking about our Rout To-morrow, thinking it was to you. Aye, d—n me, replies the other, it is like one of your blundering Tricks: What Room was you in? Two Rooms higher, says he. Why that's where the two young Gentlemen lie that supped in the Kitchen. Is it by G—d? Why, I hope they were asleep, however, for I was proposing to nail them To-morrow, imagining I had been talking to you; so I believe we had better decamp, before they are stirring, for Fear of the worst. As soon as I heard this, I left them to their farther Consultations, and turned to go back; but had scarce groped my Way three or four Paces, when I was accosted with two Arms round me, and a Whisper of, *Lord, William, how long you have been? I am almost starved*; which was followed by half a Dozen Kisses, repeated so quick, that I had not Time to disengage myself. I soon perceived



perceived it was one of the softer Sex who had made this Mistake, and was going to deceive her, when from a Hand unseen, she received a violent Blow over the Side of the Head, as I thought, which made the whole Gallery ring, and down she fell, uttering a deep Groan. As I apprehended a Salute of the same Sort, I put myself upon my Guard, but could hear a Pair of naked Feet padding away as fast as possible; so I retired with great Expedition to my own Door, which I soon gained and entered the Chamber. I perceived myself right by hearing my Friend's Voice, who enquired, What made me stay so long? And I was going to give him an Account of my Adventures, when I was jostled against by somewhat that was endeavouring to pass me, which I assumed Courage enough to seize Hold of, at the same Time enquiring, Who's this? I received no Answer, but violent Struggles to get away from me; upon which I called out lustily, *House! House!* and stamped as hard as I could at the same Time with my Foot. What are you doing, says Mr. *Diaper*, what's the Matter? Matter, says I, why I believe some infernal Spirits play their Gambols here To-night; however I believe I have got hold of somewhat that's Flesh and Blood here. Hold it fast then, says he, and I'll secure the Door till we know who disturbs us thus: So saying, he jumped out of Bed, when my Prize, trembling, begged me to

to let him go, for he had mistaken our Room for his own; Who are you, says I? Lord, Master, I am the Tapster that you saw last Night who waited upon you; I ask you ten thousand Pardons for this Offence, and the Disturbance I have occasioned you. Very well, Friend, says I, I forgive you; but pray was it you that knocked down some body in the Gallery just now? Sir, you seem to be a good-natured Gentleman, and I'll tell you the Truth; I was going to meet our Cook *Peggy* by Appointment you may be sure, and found her fast locked in the Arms of another Man, which provoked me to strike her; but I hope I have done her no Hurt, for I perceive by what you have said, Sir, that she must have mistaken you for me. Why, was not you a Villain to give her such a severe Blow? For my Part, I believe you have killed her, says I. God forbid, Sir; but you know Jealousy will drive one to any Thing, and the Blow was intended for you, Sir, I must own. By this Time a Light appeared, carried by our Paunch-gutted Rogue of a Landlord, who had been alarmed by the Noise I made; upon which I let the Fellow go, who ran away with all the Expedition imaginable, and, looking out, perceived old *Tan-belly*, with great Circumspection directing his Steps towards our Part of the Gallery; but, the Light dazzling his Eyes, he stumbled over the Poor Girl, who still lay senseless on the Ground, and came down like a weighty-  
Ruin,

Ruin, the Candle springing from him almost as far as the Place I stood in, and left us once more in Darkness. His Fright was so extreme, that I could hear the Teeth chatter in his Head, whilst he pronounced in a mumbling Accent, *Lord have Mercy upon me! Oh, spare me, spare me!* Upon which a Thought entered my Head, which I communicated to my Friend, and we directly approached him, and seizing hold of both his Ears, which we wrung very hard, in a counterfeited hollow Tone, I repeated *Barbara, celarent, dardi, ferio, baradilpton.* I have been barbarous enough, God knows, and fear you truly; Oh! spare me, spare me, he replies; upon which I repeated as much unintelligible Jargon as I could recollect, which absolutely finished his Prepossession that we were evil Spirits; and we could discern, to the entire Offence of our smelling Faculty, that his Fear operated in the strongest Manner upon him. The Girl, during this, having recovered herself, and hearing her Master's tremendous Voice, had, we could perceive, made Shift to crawl away, so that the whole Coast was clear for us, the reverberated Scoorings in the Rooms on every Side convincing us also, that every Passenger had yielded to the leaden Sway of *Morpheus*. Then, affecting an unnatural Voice, I wreaked him still harder, and told him in his Ear, that, if he did not send the two Highwaymen away directly, I'd tear him to Pieces, and scatter his Limbs in the Air.

You,

You set them, continued I, to pillage the two Gentlemen who supped in the Kitchen ; but, if the Scheme is pursued, you will be betrayed and hanged on your own Sign-post ; so think well of what I tell you, and d'ye hear, for the future don't sell Cyder for White-wine. As soon as he heard this, he sunk down, and we perceived he was terrified so much, that he was bereft of his Senses ; in which Condition we left him to come to himself, and went directly to Bed, the Morning-dawn beginning to peep abroad, hugely delighted with our Manner of Revenge, and the comical Circumstances that were likely to attend it. It was ten o'Clock before we arose, when we directly adjourned to the Kitchen, where Mrs. *Hoffess* was haranguing three Gentlemen, we found, on the Subject of the last Night's Adventures. Here, says she, have been sad Doings ! well, for my Part, I shall never be able to go to Bed in the House again ! Poor *Jack* saw the Negro last Night, and *Peggy* saw such an Apparition, to be sure, that she is not able to rise after it. But this is nothing to my poor Husband ; he heard a Knocking and calling in one of the Rooms in the long Gallery, as he thought, which to be sure was a Device of the Devil to draw him that Way ; and there he was set upon by two Monsters, vomiting out Fire, and with Eyes like burning Coals, who have pinched him black and blue, and fixed their Claws in him, and left him in a Fit, which, for  
aught.

ought I know, would have killed him, had I not gone to see what was become of him; and, surely, he raves and talks such strange Stuff, that I fear me he has quite lost his Senses; and he sent for two Gentlemen, who dined in Number Four, and, tho' I was turned out of the Room, I heard as much as to say, That he thought the House was too dangerous for them to stay in, and, as they were Friends, he advised them to be gone, for he said a great deal about God and Religion to them, and they mounted directly, and are gone; I believe, for my Part, he might have sent them to some *Bishop*, for I can't get a Word out of him, and to be sure we must take some Care to lay the Spirits, or else our House will be ruined. I wish, Dr. *Zealot*, you would go up and talk to him, for I left him quite mad and distracted, mayhap you can send them packing to the *Red-Sea* for us! The Gentlemen to whom he directed this Discourse were Mr. *Curate*, of the Village adjacent, a Surgeon of the same Place, and the Exciseman of that District; and, by hearing them speak to each other by Name, we soon learnt that the Parson's Name was *Zealot*, the Surgeon's *Talisman*, and the Exciseman's *Gage*. The Parson, who was a little petulant Animal, screwing up his Mouth, and elevating his wrinkled Brows, replied, with an Air of uncommon Gravity, that, peradventure, he should go to see him; tho', added he, he is so sinful a Wretch, never having received

ceived the Communion, since I served this Cure, that I can scarce excuse myself for such a Prostitution of my sacred Character : However, what the Church can do, Madam, in Regard to you, shall be done, and, were he haunted by *Legion* himself, I'd ferret him out of your Quarters, I warrant you : The Powers granted to our Order are extensive enough to subject *Satan*, and all his united Imps to our undoubted Sway over the Realms of Darkness. No sooner this grave Speech was uttered, than *Talisman*, with a malicious and contemptuous Grin, seized him by one of the Buttons of his Waistcoat, and broke out thus, accompanying his Reply with repeated Tugs at his Button, the Parson one while hearkening to him, and ever and anon his Eye bent upon that Part where he was fearful the Doctor would make a Dislocation to his Prejudice : Sir, Sir, your Pretensions are all Farce and Nonsense ; the Powers given to the Apostles to cast out Devils have been long since ceased in their Successors ; they are Proof, Sir, against all your Exorcisms ; the Knowledge of your Function does not arrive to such a Pitch now-a-days, I'll assure you, as to attempt Things of that Nature. If, Madam, your House is haunted, or your Husband bewitched, I'll undertake to free him of his Enchantment, which is not to be done in the old Road that has been long beaten to no Purpose by the Priests. No, no, I shall prescribe  
him

him somewhat to hang about his Neck, a Preparation of *Electrum Minerale*, by which the great *Van Helmont* dissolved so many Sorceries; adding thereto the Fume of *Solomon* and *Eleazar* Trees: Nay, *Paracelsus* is pretty clear, that if an haunted or possessed Person were only to urinate thro' a Birch Broom, gathered in the Morning Dew, and bound up when *Sol* just descends below the Horizon, it would be effectual; but I have other Means to free your House, and will undertake your Cure immediately; as to what these Gentlemen talk of laying Spirits, they——Here, all in a Rage, he was interrupted by *Zealot*, who roared out in a violent Manner, that he was an empty Pretender, and that all that he had mentioned was mere exploded Chimera: What are your *Paracelsus* and *Van Helmont* now, whose whole Works may be bought for Three-half-pence by the Pound? I thought Mr. *Talisman* had read better Authors, and to better Purpose; sure none but himself could peruse such Rubbish: I warrant you, you are superstitious enough to believe in the Philosopher's Stone too, and I dare engage never looked into Sir *Isaac's Principia* in your Life, tho' he may justly be called *Princeps Philosophorum*. *Princeps Philosophorum*, Doctor, replies *Talisman*, all in an Heat, *Princeps Rogorum*, you mean; I tell you *Newton* was a Plagiary, and borrowed every Thing valuable from *Old Daddy Flamstead*, and made no little Use of those

those very great Men you have the Impudence to bespatter so. Highly diverted at this ludicrous Scene of Absurdities, I was just going to interfere with a Word of Encouragement on the Parson's Side, who began to be out of Breath; in order to keep Matters even; when I was prevented by Gage, who, banging the End of his Cane against the Pavement, after an hearty Draught of Ale cried, that he was sure neither of them knew any Thing about what they were talking of; and, as to calling People Names, it was no Argument he said; for his Part, he never heard any thing bad of Sir *Isaac Newton*, and respected his Memory for having proved the World to be like an Egg; tho', by G—d, continues he, if it is, it is an addled one: Witness the two great Men that are now disputing about nothing; for, d—n me, if I believe there is either Devil or Apparition in the World, and I am sure it is only Priestcraft and Imagination. This florid and witty Speech was succeeded by an Horse Laugh of some Moments, in the Conclusion of which a mischievous Animal commonly y'cleped a Cat, who sat upon the Dresser at the Back of our Orator, having perceived the airy Motion of the Ribbon that hung to the Tail of his Wig, which was vibrated to and fro, according to the different Inflections of his Oration, suddenly jumped from her watchful Station, and at one Spring dexterously deprived his Pate of its artificial Covering, and at  
the



the same Time imprinted three or four sanguine Marks in the Back of his Neck with her Talons: He clapped his Hand behind him at the first Motion she made, and feeling somewhat shaggy, whilst at the same Time the Landlady gave a great Shriek at the Danger her Guest was in, with a remarkable Alteration of Countenance, he ran out of the Kitchen, muttering some Exclamations by the Way, which every one judged were the Result of a Fright; and truly frightened he was, for, whether his late Discourse, or the present Character of the House, had increased his natural Prepossessions or no, he never stopped nor staid till he got to the Village, whence a Messenger soon arrived for Mr. *Talisman* to bleed him, which terminated the most learned Dispute between him and the Parson:

*Parturient Montes, nascetur ridiculus Mus!*

We now went to Breakfast; which finished, and having understood by our Hostess's former Discourse, that the two Rogues had probably been frightened from their Design, we mounted, and set forward on our Journey, full of Reflections upon the odd Humours, and habitual Villainy, of the common Sort of People; the unaccountable and unconnected Discourse we had heard; and the Success that we had had, in terrifying a Parcel of credulous Fools, and, thro' their Means, of spreading unheard-of Wonders thro' all Parts of the Country,

Country, where the Devil presides under so many various fantastic Forms.

The Remainder of our Journey produced nothing remarkable; my Friend's Thoughts were generally employed in Contemplations of his future Happiness, in the proposed Possession of the charming Miss *Bellair*; and I here first observed the prodigious Alterations Love produces in an amorous Mind: Such a Person shall be totally absent to every other Concern, but that of his Affection; the Object of which, perpetually swimming before his Fancy, renders every Thing else distasteful and absurd; so forceably does his Imagination work, that, by a constant Anticipation of what he wishes for, he enjoys every Minute, in Idea, the happy Occurrences of Years to come; he converses with the Mistress of his Fancy; and so strong is the Enchantment, that he accuses his Friend for Want of Respect, if he impertinently breaks in upon his Meditations: Whenever I did so upon Mr. *Diaper's*, it was censured in so peevishly fretful a Strain, that I had only one Remedy to regain his Smiles; which was, by making myself a Kind of Companion in his imaginary Transports, and supposing myself present at some future Incident, big with Bliss and Rapture, which never failed answering my End.

As soon as I discovered the native Seats of Peace and Innocence, which I had been so long absent

from, my Joy broke forth in a thousand tumultuous Expressions of that Satisfaction, that so visibly agitated my Countenance: My Friend took his Share in my Pleasures; one of the greatest of which was the Thought of the Joy I should give my Father and Mother, by seeing us; and, to increase that Joy, we had forborne to write an Account of the precise Time we intended to set out at, for *Yorkshire*, so that our Arrival would be quite unexpected; and therefore we left our Horses at a Farmer's, about a Mile from my Father's, where I was recognised with great Joy, and set out on Foot for his House. We arrived just as the Family were sitting down to Dinner: Mr. *Diaper*, who entered first, and whose Face my Father and Mother did not easily recollect, immediately presented me to my Mother, who, the Minute I had fixed my Eyes upon her, only cried out, *Dear Joe!* and was quite overcome with the Surprise; I took her in my Arms, and, begging Pardon for my Rashness, our Interchange of Caresses was too tender and delicate to be described. My Father joined us, and, blessing us both, was every Moment straining us in his Embraces; the Servants wept for Joy; the whole House echoed forth our mutual Congratulations; the Neighbourhood caught the enlivening Infection; and Crouds of Visitants welcomed us into the Country. Mr. *Salsa*, particularly distinguishing himself,

himself, set the Bells to Ringing; and my dear Parents, willing to make it a Kind of Jubilee, opened their House to all the Parish; and there appeared no End to the Endearments we experienced on every Side.

The next Morning after our Arrival, Mr. Sharp-ley and Mr. Archer, who were both acquainted the Evening before with my Return, visited us; and the Sight of them revived all the Love I still continued to bear to their Sons.

## C H A P. XIX.

*He gives his Father an Account of his Master's Goodness.—Is pardoned his late Follies.—Receives a Present from his Mother.—The Author's Person described.—Visits Sir Walter Rich.—His Reception there.—Character of Miss Louisa Rich.—Mr. Diaper receives a Letter, which occasions his Departure.*

THE first Opportunity I could obtain, I begged the Favour of my Father to indulge me with a few Words in Private, which he immediately complied with; and, taking me into his Study, with the utmost Tenderneſs, inquired if I had any particular Request to make him? If I had, my Behaviour had been ſo agreeable to him, that I

might be sure of its being granted, the Minute I mentioned it. So indulgent a Preface almost disconcerted me in my intended Discourse, and for some Time I remained almost motionless, with my Eyes fixed on the Ground: He took me in his Arms, and, with a warm Pressure, told me he feared I was not well, or that somewhat oppressed my Mind, which he conjured me to let him know: Look upon me, my Dear, says this best of Men, in the Light of a Bosom Friend; and let that take off somewhat of that Awe that may be inspired by the Presence of a Father. I grasped his Hand, and, after some further Pause, made him acquainted with the numerous Follies I had been guilty of; sincerely relating all my unfortunate Mishaps, and concealing only such Particulars as would have been offensive to the Purity of his Ears; his Astonishment was so great, that I had the Opportunity to proceed, without Interruption, to enumerate the generous Behaviour of my good Master, and my Friend, in such Terms as the Warmth of my grateful Heart inspired; the Circumstance of his having undertaken to pay my Debts, and every Thing that I thought I could not dispense with myself in concealing from him; concluding with such Observations as naturally might arise from a View of my Misconduct. When I had finished, I perceived he was strangely affected; and, desiring me to stay there till his Return, he left me in a Situation  
between

between Grief at having discomposed him, and Joy, that I had got rid of the Load of Concealments, which oppressed me. I had not remained a Quarter of an Hour, when he returned, and, with a Smile of Complacency, put me out of my Pain, by telling me, that, tho' the Hearing of my Misconduct had given him great Disorder, yet, as my Repentance seemed so sincere, and my Reflections so just, and that a mere Principle of Justice to him, and Gratitude to my Master, had moved me to this Discovery, he could not excuse himself from forgiving me: Come then, my Son, come to my Arms! and let me not be behind in the Race with this excellent Friend and Master: I shall return him my Acknowledgments in a Letter To-morrow, and will remit him the Sum he so generously intended to bestow on you: You make me Amends, my Dear, for the Trouble you have given me, and the Expence you have occasioned me, by joining me, in the List of your Benefactors, with him; and may the Almighty, whose Goodness is so manifest, in your Restoration to Virtue and Religion, enable you, by his gracious Assistance, to persevere in a Course of such Actions as are most agreeable to his Will, and most conducive to your present and eternal Happiness. Let us say no more then of Faults, I am resolved for ever to forget you was guilty of, and rejoin our Friends, who expect us; and so saying, without allowing me further Time

for Acknowledgment, than just to kiss his Hand, which I wet with my Tears, he left me to compose myself. Before I could well get out of the Room, I heard my Mother just entering; upon which I reached from a Shelf, hastily, a Volume of *Rowe's Plays*, and dipped into that Scene of *Tamerlane*, where *Monefes* is strangled, and seemed reading, to hide my Discomposure, which, upon her Enquiry, I attributed to my Concern for *Arpasia*. This served my Turn, and my Mother, who now first had me in Private, quite overcame me with her Endearments, which I returned with an ineffable Satisfaction. Nothing could equal her Tenderness for me, which she gave a Loose to, and even shed a Flood of Tears of Gladness, on the Occasion of seeing me again; which, I too tenderly loved her, not to increase with mine: 'Twas then this lovely Mother put into my Hands a Purse with an hundred Guineas, which she had reserved, she said, as a Present for me, the first Time she saw me in the Country; and without giving me Time to thank her, enquired if I had parted with the Ring which was given me by Miss *Rich*, on Occasion of my saving her from the Fire? I felt some Emotion at the Mention of that Lady, and told her, blushing, that it was still, and had ever been since, upon my Finger. She advised me to wait upon Sir *Walter* and his Daughter, who had both expressed a great Regard  
for

for me several Times, since my Abode in *London* : Nay, continues she, Miss has been almost my constant Companion, ever since her Father removed to the new House he has built in the Neighbourhood ; and I have conceived a very great Affection for her, second to none but that I bear to thee, my Dear. Our further Discourse was interrupted by Mr. *Diaper*, who came to summon us to a Game at Cards; and, taking my Mother about the Neck, told her he would forgive her any Thing but keeping his Friend from him ; and so, to punish you, *Mamma*, I've resolved to sit opposite to you at a Game at Whist, where I'll use you most unmercifully. We then all three adjourned into the Parlour, where we found my Father, with our two Friends ; and it being my Chance, with Mr. *Archer*, to stand out, and not being much inclined to Cards, I resolved, even then, to wait upon Sir *Walter*. My Mother's Discourse had raised a Kind of longing Desire in me to see Miss *Louisa*, which I did not trouble myself to account for ; but flattered myself, 'twas only from the View my Mother had given me of her Acquirements, and those increased Perfections she had attained, since I had seen her. From the same Motives, I dressed myself with more Care than ordinary ; and, imparting my Design to Mr. *Archer*, he told me he'd accompany me, in a Visit to his old Friend. In our Way we discoursed over the History of my-



self, and his Son, and my Friend *Sharpley*, whom we each expressed the same longing Desire to see: Mr. *Archer* wished, in a very kind Manner, that his Son might be improved as much as I was, when he returned Home, and passed many Compliments on my Person and Appearance, telling me jocosely that he'd send circular Orders to all the Fathers in the *West-Riding*, to keep their Daughters up till I went again to *London*. This Discourse, and our intended Visit to Miss *Rich*, first occasioned me to bestow one Consideration upon my Person; but an irresistible Inclination to please, where I was going, gave me no little Satisfaction in Mr. *Archer's* Opinion of me. My Stature was certainly of the most commanding Sort, and my every Motion discovered a Strength and Firmness in my Joints, that indicated me no puny Descendant of my Father; my Complexion was fair, accompanied with a Ruddiness in my Cheeks, that was set off by dark Hair, which flowed over my Shoulders, descending in Ringlets, from the Confinement of a Ribbon, which tied it behind: A good-natured Softness in my Features gave me a Place in a Person's Favour, almost the Minute I appeared, which I often experienced very much to my Advantage; add, to all this, an agreeable, modish Dress; and I was no inconsiderable Figure in a Country Village, as the Custom of our Trade allowed us also Lace upon our Hats and Waist-coats.

coats. We got, in a little more than half an Hour, to Sir *Walter's* new Seat, which partook of all the concurrent Advantages of Air, Water, and Situation. A Walk of Elms led up to the House, which was built in the modern Taste, and seemed to bespeak a very good Fancy in the Architect; every Thing had an Air of rural Simplicity; and this Villa was not loaded with such Ornaments as serve, indeed, to dignify a Palace in Town, but are highly absurd in a rustic Mansion, which seems peculiarly intended to sooth the Toils of Business, to inspire Health and Vigour, and Ease to the Mind, and should principally be formed to set off the Beauties of Nature, without surfeiting her too much with the affected Touches of Art. In short, Sir *Walter* seemed to have been inspired with a Beam from that Genius, which has so beautifully appeared in the magnificent, yet plain and simple Retreats, of a *Boyle*, or a *Temple*.

We had hardly advanced half Way up the Walk, when we were met by Sir *Walter* himself, his Nephew, and his amiable Daughter. As Sir *Walter* had heard of my Arrival, he was at no Loss to guess who I was; and therefore, tho' he vowed he should not have known me else, he hugged and kissed me, and protested he was as glad to see me as if I had been his own Son. I returned my Compliments to him, in the politest Terms I was capable of, as also to those of his Nephew, who, I

could perceive, was much the same as I had left him ; and, like many narrow souled Wretches, seemed to grudge me the Caresses I received. Whilst they were giving a Welcome to Mr. *Archer*, I saluted Miss *Louisa*, and could see her Colour come and go at this Interview ; and indeed I found her so, past all Description, improved in her Person, that I lost at once all my Assurance, which was converted into a timid Awe, and a Reverence that made my Address little less than the Stile of Adoration. Never sure did raptur'd Fancy rove over such a Profusion of Charms and Graces, as at this Instant accosted my View ! Imagination, in her most wanton Career, could not picture so much real Excellence ! Miss *Louisa* was of the middle Stature ; her Bosom just betrayed her Sex ; and her Shape was too exquisite to be described in other Words, than those of *Prior* :

*Fine by Degrees, and beautifully less :*

Her lovely Neck was shaded with dark brown Hair, which in sportful Ringlets played in the Breeze ; her Face, whose Features were quite regular, was overlooked by the finest Pair of Eyes, sure, that ever kindled Love, of the exact Colour of her Hair : An Habit of pensive Thoughtfulness, which was constitutional in her, had spread an inimitable Languor and Softness through her whole Form, that melted the very Soul ; but, when she  
smiled,

smiled, Ten thousand reviving nameless Beauties discovered themselves, and the Milk-white Ivory Teeth and the laughing, joyous Dimple that then appeared, at the Extremity of her pretty Mouth, had an Effect that can only be felt, and is too delicate for Description. Her Hand was smaller than usual, even in Women of her Size; and the little Foot, which was all her Modesty of Temper would suffer her to discover, when it peeped out from its Confinement, seemed even too small to support the Mistress of it. A majestic Dignity of Aspect flowing from a Consciousness of innate Innocence and Virtue, was the Attendant of all her Actions; but, in which, the least Tincture of Affectation or Pride was not perceivable, and indeed was absolutely contradictory to her Nature. Such was this delightful Fair-one, and no Wonder then, if all my Faculties were absorbed in Admiration! Oh! have we heard the thrilling Notes breathed in the inspiring Airs, the gentle Cadences of the inimitable *Handel*! Such was her Voice, whose melodious Accents diffused around unutterable Gladness; nor tuneful *Philomel's* was half so sweet, who, *most musical, most melancholy*, chaunts her Griefs to the responsive Groves; or the towering *Lark's*, who cheers the Morn, when *the dappled Dawn doth rise*!

I was soon awakened from the Contemplation of these Graces, by the Interruption of Sir *Walter*

and Mr. *Archer*, who approached us, just as Miss was returning my Compliments, with Congratulations on my safe Arrival in the Country, in such a Manner as conveyed an Idea of her receiving great Pleasure from the Visit. Well, my Boy, says her Father, what dost think of *Lucy*, don't she appear worth saving from Burning, you Rogue, you? God Zounds, I wish thou hadst an Estate for her Sake, or that that *Youngster*, pointing to his Nephew, who was at some Distance, would acquire thy Merit, for whom I intend her, if he behaves well; for I think a fine Woman, as well as a fine Estate, ought to be entailed upon the Family she proceeds from. This abrupt Discourse of the honest Baronet kindled Blushes in his Daughter's Face, and, fearing the farther Pain the Continuance might give her, Mr. *Archer* proposed to go and see the House, which I had never been in. Accordingly, giving the Lady my Hand, which she accepted with a Look of extreme Kindness and Condescension, we followed her Father, and were introduced to the Mansion, whose Inside bespoke the Opulence of the Possessor, in all the varied Furniture and Ornaments that are the Product of Wealth, and a generous Use of it. As it was Evening before we arrived, this first Visit was but short, and we parted, after Invitations to see him every Day, the Knight letting me know, he'd never forgive me if I did not take an Hunt with him, and make his House my Home,

Home, almost, whilst I continued in the Country; adding, which was indeed a greater Inducement to me than all the rest, I warrant you, Miss *Lucy* here will find some Way or other to entertain her Preserver; to which she gave an Inclination of Assent, and in the most agreeable Manner imaginable enforced her Father's Invitation. As we returned homewards, Mr. *Archer* observed, that I was quite buried in Thought, and laughingly asked me, if I had left my Heart behind me? Ah! says he, more seriously, I wish, my dear *Thompson*, thou hadst the Possession of that worthy Creature, who is doomed to the Embraces of that Clodpate we saw yonder, and perhaps will be made miserable by it. On our Arrival at Home, we were chid for our Elopement, till we discovered where we had been, and I observed my Friend *Diaper* to look more than ordinary melancholy; upon which, being fearful he was not well, I asked him to take a Walk that fine Moon-shine Evening, which he was pleased with the Opportunity of doing, and, when we were alone, pulled out a Letter, which he said he had received by an Express, since I went out, adding, with a Sigh, there you will find the Cause of my Uneasiness.—I must be gone To-morrow. I hastily opened it with great Trepidation, and found it as follows:

DEAR

DEAR SIR,

**I** Take this first Opportunity of paying my Respects to you, since the Pleasure your Company afforded us; and am the more ready to do it, as I believe your Regard to a certain young Lady will determine you to let us see you as soon as possible again. Poor Miss *Sakey* has had a violent Attack of a Fever, which has at Times even rendered her delirious; and, tho' it has spent its baneful Fury, and she is somewhat recovered, it has left a Weakness behind it, that almost renders her an Object of Compassion, and, for I will not conceal any Thing from you, I fear your Absence preys upon her Spirits as much as the Distemper has done upon her Body: You are too generous to esteem a Woman of Merit the less for making no Secret of her Regard to you, as my Sister's Education and Disposition intirely render her incapable either of Affectation or Dissimulation. In short, dear *Diaper*, a Word to the Wise is enough, and, if you take a Tour over here, I am sure it will contribute greatly to remove the poor Girl's Indisposition; and you are too much the Man of Honour to stand out, when you have such a Summons to surrender yourself at the head Quarters of your Heart. I must desire my sincere Respects to my Friend *Thompson*, but will not be so cruel to insist upon his bearing you Company, as it will remove him so soon from his Relations, tho' I long to see him;

him; but, if he should oppose your leaving him, assure him, I'll return you again to him in a Week at farthest. Mrs. *Bellair* sends her Compliments to you both.

*I am*

*Your sincere Friend,*

*And humble Servant,*

A. BELLAIR.

P. S. Be it remembered, that this Tour excuses neither of you from your Promise of spending some Days with us, in your Return to *London*. Take no Notice, when you see my Sister, of this Letter, and your Coming will be a greater Compliment to her.

I could not oppose my Friend's Desire to be gone, and he was so impatient for the Morning, that Sleep never entered his Eyes the whole Night. I undertook to apologise for his Absence to my Father and Mother, who were not stirring when he set out; so, writing by him an handsome Letter to Mr. *Bellair*, I rode with him some Miles, and then left him to pursue his Journey, and returned Home.

CHAP.



## C H A P. XX.

*He is enamoured with Miss Louisa.—Combates with his Passion.—Resolves to conquer it.—Mr. Diaper's Advice overcomes his Resolution.—Sir Walter fetches them to his House.*

**I** Soon satisfied my Father and Mother in Mr. Diaper's Absence, and now found a great and sudden Alteration in myself; Conversation, even with those beloved Persons, became dull and insipid; I sought out Solitudes, and was never more uneasy than when disturbed in them; whole Days together, in this Absence of my Friend, I spent in unfrequent Walks, where I might be at Liberty to indulge my Contemplations: Alas! I had received an Inmate into my Bosom, that rendered me perpetually restless and uneasy: Whenever I waited upon Miss Rich, I came away still more full of the insinuating Infection, which bore down all the Powers of Reason, which in vain I called to my Assistance, before it. I was even fearful of seeing her, apprehensive the tumultuous Motions of my Soul might get the better of my Discretion; nothing pleased me but thinking or talking of that dear Creature, a Flood of tender Sentiments softened my Breast, and sometimes even melted me into  
Tears:

Tears: Too surely I found Love had fixed his Empire in my Heart, where he triumphed with more than tyrannic Sway: Such a Progress had a few Days made, that I hardly could attend a Moment to any Thing but the Dictates of this new Passion; but yet it was a holy and pure Respect, not mingled with the disordered Ravings of Lust I had so often experienced: No, it took Rise from a Knowledge of the Virtue, the Merit, the amiable Goodness of the Object, which even Reason told me was the most praise-worthy and deserving I had ever seen or conversed with. I longed, methought, to make such Charms of Beauty, Wit, and Truth my own; and here I was justified, thus far I could greatly excuse myself; but when I considered, on the other Hand, the great Disparity of our Conditions and Fortunes, the Ingratitude I should be guilty of to her Father, who loved me, and had informed me of his Designation of her to another, and that such a Woman would be Reward sufficient even for an whole Life of Pains, and Care, and Industry in the Profession I was destined to, I sickened at the Prospect of the Miseries I was bringing upon myself, and upon this Object of my Wishes, were she favourable to me; which however I had no Reason to believe she would, from the Knowledge I had of her Prudence, and the Duty and constant Regard she paid to her Father; tho' on all Occasions she had treated me with a Distinction  
favouring

favouring somewhat of the Regard due to a Brother, which was a Title she always gave me, as she called my Mother her's, and was even what Sir *Walter* himself had heard her with Pleasure repeat. She took Notice, and seemed pleased with the Value I set upon the dear Ring she had given me so many Years ago, and shewed a great Fondness for my Company, and a thorough Detestation of the Brute, her Cousin, which she could not forbear even to impart to me when we were alone. At her Harpsichord, she took Delight in all the softest tenderest Airs, and, as I was mighty fond of Hearing her, would be ever obliging me, often requesting me to accompany her with my Voice, which was tolerable good, or the *German Flute*. She would often, in seeming Compliment to me, praise the Life of a Citizen, enumerate what she had heard of the sudden Fortunes many of them had made, and the great Families they had allied themselves to. Another discouraging Circumstance was my Condition of a Servant at present, and I often cursed my Fate, that had given me a susceptible Heart, great and capacious; but had denied me a Situation, and the Goods of Fortune, to indulge its laudable Desires. My Family indeed was one of the best in the Country, but Sir *Walter's* Estate, which was very great, and his Title, threw a Damp upon that Thought: I could expect at most, from the Parsimony and Possessions of my Father,

then,

ther, a few Thousand Pounds, which might enable me to begin the World with Advantage; on the contrary, her Fortune, independent of her Father, was 12,000*l.* which had been left her by an Uncle, and, as her Father shewed no Inclination to Marriage, it was very probable his whole Estate would descend to her and her Issue. In fine, every Thing served to discourage any Attempts I might make that Way, and, after repeated and most cruel Struggles, I came to a firm Resolution to stifle my Flame, and to endeavour to cure it by Absence; but no one, who has not been in the same dreadful Circumstances, can imagine the horrid Conflict I had to go thro', and the Practice of this Resolution cost me more Pain than if my Bowels had been torn out by the Hands of an Executioner. I then resorted to Books, and the Conversation of my Friends; but that would not do. I took the Tour of the neighbouring Villages, and visited the whole Parish, who adored me for my Father's Sake; but here every Step I went, every House I entered, presented somewhat that brought my charming *Louisa* to Mind; every Family was full of her Praises, and Instances of her Kindness and Benevolence; the Poor were clothed by her, the Hungry fed, and sure so many Marks of the Goodness, Piety, and Charity of a young Lady never abounded any where before: This I found had been her and my Mother's constant Employment.

of

of every vacant Hour, and Blessings and Prayers for her Welfare were heard on every Side. I now became a Votary to the Chace, and other Country Sports; but here I was so often thrown into the Way of Sir *Walter* and his Kinsman, that I could bear it no longer; the one always forcing me Home with him, where I was sure to see the Cause of my Distress; and the other being quite obnoxious to my Sight, from the Idea I had of his ensuing Happiness: And, on his Part, regarding the Favours I received as so many Insults upon himself, and as low Minds are easily inspired with Suspicions, he thought he saw somewhat more than ordinary between Miss *Louisa* and myself, which in an invidious Way he insinuated frequently to his Uncle, who only laughed at him, and called him Fool for his Pains: You Blockhead, would he often say, you have no Worth yourself, and are jealous of every body that has; Zounds, it's Time enough to confine her to your Company and Humours, when she is married to thee. In this impartial Manner could Sir *Walter* judge, and yet was determined to sacrifice his Daughter to a Wretch he despised. Upon my Friend's Return, who had quite by his Presence chased away Miss *Bellair's* Disorder, and was more and more enamoured with that lovely Woman, I proposed to my Father, that we should accept of an Invitation made us by Mr. *Archer* and Mr. *Sharples*, to spend a Week or two at their Houses; which  
he

he readily complied with, and accompanied us himself there for a few Days: Here, I thought I bid fair for Ease, in their Conversation, and the Amusements they had provided us; but, alas! 'twas Flying from myself; and I grew so visibly altered, that a Man of less Discernment than Mr. *Diaper* would have suspected the Cause. He had often seen Miss *Rich*, and was full of her Praises; and, by observing my Behaviour in her Company, had formed a near Guess at my Disorder; so that he seemed not at all surpris'd, when I opened my Situation to him: But guess my Amaze, when, instead of assisting me to conquer my Passion, he spoke to the following Effect: Dear Friend, I am sorry you make yourself so uneasy; consider, Sir *Walter* is doing a Work that God and Nature must equally disapprove, and a Work that is as absurd to attempt, as to reconcile Antipathies: No, no, I would assist you in any Thing to relieve that worthy young Lady from the impending Ruin that awaits her, in the proposed Match with that Wretch her Father seems determin'd to give her to; and as to you, my dear *Joey*, in my Eye, you are an equal Match for her, or any other Woman. I'll propose to my Father, as soon as we return, to take you into Partnership; and in a few Years Sir *Walter* will not blush at an Alliance with you; I'm sure if he does, she has a Fortune independent of him; and

I don't

I don't think we are bound to obey our Parents, in what would not only end in our Unhappiness, but be one of the greatest Crimes we could commit, an Offence against Heaven itself: Endeavour then, by all lawful Means, to gain her Affection; and, as to the Time you have to serve, I know my Father's Regard to you so well, that it need give you no Manner of Uneasiness. How easily are we reasoned into our Wishes, and brought to follow our Inclinations! but the Kindness, the Friendship, of this dear Youth, brought Tears into my Eyes, and I remained in his Arms some Minutes without Speaking, his Generosity had so affected me: When I recovered, my Acknowledgments were extreme; and I could have no Objection to what he said, so exactly his Advice tallied with my Desires. I returned to my usual Tranquillity, and was now as eager to return Home, as I had been before to come away from thence.

I was in this State of Mind, when one Morning Sir *Walter* came hallooing at Mr. *Archer's* Door; and, dismounting, came up to our Bed-chamber, where we had just begun to dress ourselves: Lads, Lads, we can do no longer without you at Home; my Daughter obliges me to give a Ball To-night, to the neighbouring good People, in order to have both your Companies; so make no Words, but mount, and away with me directly; mayhap we may start Game as we return, which  
we'll

we'll carry Home as Part of our Dinner. We made no Reply; and he went on, in his merry Way, till we were ready to go, when, taking Leave of our good Friends, who promised to be with us in a Day or two, we rode after Sir *Walter*, who was heartily vexed we could meet with nothing in our Way to his House worth killing; where we arrived about Noon, after a very pleasant Ride, in which we entertained him with various Relations of Town Adventures, at which he lifted up his Eyes, and was sure, he said, *London* was the Devil.

---

## C H A P. XXI.

*They are received with great Pleasure by Miss Louisa.—He dances with her at the Ball.—An Accident discovers his Affection to her.—The Reception it meets with.—He is assaulted and wounded, by some Persons unknown.—Carried to Sir Walter's.—Distress of Miss Louisa, on the Occasion.—She declares her Love for him.*

SIR *Walter* would not permit us to go Home to shift our Linnen; but lent us a Servant to send for fresh Cloaths from my Father's; and, at the same Time, to invite him, and my Mother, to his Daughter's Evening Entertainment. When

we



we were dressed, he introduced us to that young Lady, who was habited in a white Damask Sacque, which flowed loosely about her, with an Air of beautiful Negligence ; and she was so brightly bespangled with Jewels, in her Stomacher and other Parts of her Apparel, that I never beheld a more sumptuous Sight ; but her Ornaments borrowed Lustre from her, instead of increasing her Charms, and served only as so many Foils to set off her blooming Graces. After the usual Compliments, she joined with her Father in rallying me, for absenting myself from their House ; which drew a Sigh from me, which it was not in my Power to suppress, and which I found she perceived, and innocently asked me if I had not been well ; which I answered, in assuring her, that nothing but a certain melancholy Disorder, that for some time had oppressed me, would have detained me from the only Conversation that I delighted in. She seemed to be concerned at what I said, and was going to reply, when Dinner was served up, and we sat down to Table. Amongst other Dishes, was a Chicken Pye, which, says the lovely Creature, I've heard you say, Mr. *Thompson*, was your Favourite, and I made it on Purpose for you ; and therefore you must oblige me, by eating very heartily. Such an Instance of Regard transported me ; and I replied, with a Tone and Manner, that let her easily conceive how much I thought myself obliged ;

liged; our Conversation grew quite brisk; and my Angel Mistress said and did so many agreeable Things, that my Friend, as well as myself, was full of Admiration: The old Gentleman was ready to jump out of his Skin for Joy, and protested that I had inspired her by my Company; Why, my Boy, she had drooped ever since you have been gone, says he; but if ever you serve her such a Trick again, whilst you stay in the Country, I'll never forgive you; nor I neither, I assure you, Papa, says Miss, with an inimitable Pleasantness in her Smile: Ay, ay, replies Sir *Walter*, I, and *Numps* here, meaning his Nephew, are nothing in the World with her; she loves your Company, because you read and understand Books, and such kind of Things, which we don't know the Use of, further than the *Bible*, and *Shaw's Justice*, and *Jacob's Law Dictionary*, may-hap. Night approached, and Company poured in very fast, which forced us to adjourn into the Ball-room, which was decked in a very splendid and genteel Manner; and during the whole Time it lasted, I had the Happiness to be Partner to my charming Creature, every Touch of whose Hand fired a-new my Soul. Her Cousin was busy mean while in Drinking and Carousing with his Companions in the Hall, this Manner of spending Time not being suitable to his Taste or Education. Sir *Walter* danced with my Mother; and Mr. *Diaper* procured an agreeable

VOL. I. K Partner,

Partner, in a young Lady of the Neighbourhood ; and the whole concluded with an elegant cold Repast, which shewed the polite Judgment of the Mistress of the Treat. Sir *Walter* would not permit us to leave him that Night ; and, after his Daughter retired to Rest, resolved that we should both accompany him in a Debauch ; where we drank so freely, tho' contrary to our usual Custom, that 'twas with Difficulty we steered our Way to Bed ; Sir *Walter* declaring with an Oath, that we were heartier Cocks than he thought us to be, and not such wishy-washy Fellows as he frequently met with from *London*.

The next Day Sir *Walter* proposed to take an Airing, on Horseback, upon the neighbouring Downs ; and his Daughter very readily consented to bear us Company. No Woman ever sat a Side-Saddle with better Grace ! She looked like *Diana* herself, in a Riding-habit, which was the richest that the indulgent Fondness of her Father could procure for her ! The Pad she rode, which was a beautiful, long-tailed, Chestnut, seemed proud of his Burthen, and champed the Bit, and pawed the Earth, with a seeming Consciousness of the Honour he received in such a Rider. We had just gained the Downs, when the Beast, who was naturally startish, suddenly descrying some Object that surprised him, curvetted to one Side, and immediately after set up such a Race, that it was not  
in

in the Power of the Bridle to controul him. Sir *Walter* and my Friend were a considerable Way behind us, when this happened, and I was riding by her Side; she gave a Shriek, and the vicious Creature tore up the very Ground before him; distracted with the Danger the Life of my Soul was in, all wild and apprehensive for her Safety, I clapped Spurs to my Horse, endeavouring to overtake and stop her's; which, before I could effect, he stumbled in an Hole, in his full Career, and came down, casting the frightened Fair-one at some Distance from him, where she lay in a Swoon, when I came up, and dismounted. I immediately took her up in my Arms, and, in the first Agonies of my Grief, could not help crying aloud, my Tears descended plentifully upon her lovely Face, which lay reclined, all pale and wan, upon my Bosom. Heavens! What an unfortunate Wretch am I! Oh ye Powers restore me the lovely Maid, or let my Breath expire with her's! But, alas! she hears me not, and already she's no more! Whether the Tears I shed, or these disjointed Exclamations, brought her to herself, I can't say; but a Sigh, which heaved her panting Breast, gave me the inexpressible Satisfaction of thinking her alive: Gracious God! I continued, give me back the charming Maid, the Pattern of your own Excellence! and, casting my Eyes down, perceived her's were opened; when, in the Tumult

of my Joy, I imprinted an eager Kiss upon her Forehead; but, recollecting myself, I blushed, and was ready to sink into the Earth, for my Presumption: She drew herself out of my Arms, and gently said, Mr. *Thompson*, I'm troublesome, I can walk: Dear Madam, I falteringly said, let me support you, you are certainly hurt; and by this Time our two Friends came up, and had caught the Horse, who, after his Fault, was galloping Home, and first gave Tidings of the Misfortune. I wiped my Face, and strove to conceal my Tears. Sir *Walter* was mad with Joy, that his Daughter had received no Hurt; and my Friend took his Share of the general Satisfaction! As to me, I was quite abashed at the Thought of having incurred her Anger, by my Rashness, and the Discovery I had made of my Sentiments; and, removing her Side-saddle to my Horse, without daring to look at her, assisted her to remount. Sir *Walter* embraced me over and over, and was so full of the Service I had done her, that nothing else employed him but Thanks and Praises all the Way Home; she said very little, and seemed quite reserved, which was attributed to the Accident that had just befallen her; but I interpreted it as Resentment against me, and the Thought racked me with the greatest Torture. As soon as we arrived, she begged Leave to retire, and went to Bed, and her Woman brought Word down that she was very ill; upon which, proper Assistance

Assistance was called, and we were all in the utmost Pain and Anxiety for her. I resolved not to stir till she was better; and Sir *Walter* took our Concern very kindly; but, good God, the Pangs that I felt were indescribable, and my Friend could scarce keep me from doing some desperate Deed upon myself, till Word was brought us down that she was fallen into a Doze, after taking somewhat to compose her. The next Morning, to my extreme Satisfaction, she was perfectly recovered, and appeared at Breakfast, if possible, more enchanting than ever; but I was the only Sufferer, to whom she behaved with such a Distance, tho' with the utmost Gentility, that I cursed a Thousand Times the Imprudence that had robbed me at once of the sweet Familiarity I had before enjoyed: However, she returned me her Thanks with so much feeling Sincerity, that I had Reason to rejoice in the Service I was so happy to render her, on this Occasion; but I could not overcome my timid Confusion, which scarce allowed me to speak three Words, the whole Time of Breakfast; and I took Leave in a Situation of Mind, that made me an Object of Compassion; and arriving at Home, as soon as Decency would permit me, I retired, to vent my Sorrows in Private. For some Days a State of stupid Melancholy possessed me, which made my Mother very uneasy, and was ascribed to Illness, when a Message arrived from

Miss *Louisa*, to desire my Company ; glad Tidings indeed ! which in a Minute dispelled my Gloom, and I set out, immediately, for her wished for Presence. In entering the open Walk to Sir *Walter's* House, was a Kind of Wilderness, which partly Nature, and partly Art, had made quite private, and concealed from View : 'Thro' this Maze I directed my Steps, as it was the nearest Way ; and had got half thro', when I received a sudden Shot from a Pistol, which grazed the Side of my Head, and almost stunned me ; and, before I could turn about, to discover the Hand it came from, I was saluted with a Blow over my Arm, and a second over my Head, which felled me, senseless to the Ground. I had no Time for Reflection before my Fall ; and whether the ill Usage from these Assassins was repeated, or what followed, I can't tell ; for the first Discovery I made, when I recovered my Senses, was my Father and my Friend, weeping by my Bed-side, which seemed to be in a very strange Place, which I did not at all recollect. I found myself weak and feeble, and could scarce speak, but inquired, with a faint Voice, where I was, and what brought me there ? They were overjoyed to perceive I had so well recovered my Understanding, but tenderly begged me to compose myself, and, in due Time, I should be informed of every Thing : They said no more ; and I could see, by the Sorrow displayed  
in

in their Countenances, that I had been very dangerously ill. For some Hours I kept myself still, according to their Desire; but, tho' my Weakness still was extreme, I heard every Thing that was said, and saw my Mother very assiduous about me, and, to my great Surprise, Sir *Walter*, Mr. *Archer*, and Mr. *Sharpley*, frequently in the Room, inquiring how I did? Being left in the latter Part of the Day, with only Mr. *Diaper* by me, I beckoned him to my Bed-side, and begged to know what had happened; but he still refused me, and desired me earnestly, not to enquire any Thing till I was more capable to attend the Recital. I was forced to comply, and was three Days longer in this Uncertainty, in which Time my Youth got the better of my Illness, and I recovered so fast, that I was able to crawl about the Chamber, by Means of holding by the Chairs and Tables, and in two Days more, without any Assistance, tho' my Arm pained me violently still: 'Twas now that my Friend, who was ever with me, ventured to talk to me, and, in Answer to my Queries, spoke thus: Blessed be God, my dear *Joey*, that you are so well again; you have gone thro' an intolerable Fever, attended with a constant *Delirium*, of near ten Days, in which every body despaired of your Life; and you may judge the Grief and Sorrow it occasioned to us all, especially as the Authors of your horrid ill Treatment were not known, nor



could be guessed at, or found, upon the most diligent Search; for you was discovered weltering in your Gore in Sir *Walter's* Wilderness, in all Appearance dead, by some of his Servants, who conveyed you to his House, where you have been ever since, and are at present in his own Bed-chamber; and I may venture to tell you, since your Recovery has had a like effect on her, that Miss *Louisa* has been almost as bad as yourself: When you was first brought to her Father's in that Condition, she swooned away, and was with Difficulty brought to herself; but when the Surgeons had pronounced your Case to be very bad, and doubtful at best, her Concern could be no longer hid; she wept, and, in a frantic Manner, tore her lovely Hair, and expressed such a Regard for you, as surprised every body, which was succeeded by a Fever which had well nigh put a Period to her Life. Sir *Walter*, at present, thinks this the Effect only of her Friendship; but your Mother and her Woman are Witnesses to the contrary; in her light-headed Condition, she was incessantly calling on her dear *Thompson*; said she could not live without you; and expressed such a peculiar Tenderness for you, that any one might guess the Cause. In Proportion as you have recovered, she has gained Strength, and is now better than yourself; but, tho' she is ever inquiring after you, she has intreated your Mother, and charged her Woman not to mention the

the

the unguarded Things she has said. I congratulate you and myself on this Discovery, which, I hope, will hasten your Cure. No one can tell, my dear *Joey*, the Grief and Trouble you have put your Father and Mother in, and how greatly affected I have been with the Danger of so inestimable a Friend; and Sir *Walter* has shewn as much Regard for you, as if you had been his own Son, notwithstanding his Distraction for the Illness of his Daughter. Pray now tell me, my Friend, how you came by such Wounds in your Head, and that Fracture of your Arm, which has puzzled the Skill of the best of Surgeons about us? I gave Mr. *Diaper* an Account of the Affair, which amazed him; but after all our Guesses, tho' there seemed to be so visible an Intent to destroy me, we could not conjecture who could make such an Attempt, as I had never disoblged any one in that Part of the Country, and was universally beloved. Tho' my Grief rose to a great Pitch, at the Thoughts of my *Louisa's* Illness, yet what I had heard so transported me, that I forgot even that, and my own, and indulged an hundred Extasies and Transports! The glad Knowledge of her tender Sentiments towards me made me almost bless the cruel Hand that involved me in so much Danger, and made the Discovery: I exulted in my Happiness, as much as if I had her already mine; and the Joy it occasioned soon brought me to my pristine Health

K. 5.

and



and Vigour. That dear Creature likewise became so well, as to be able to leave her Chamber : Our Inquiries after one another had been repeated every Minute ; and now, that I was recovered so much, I burnt for an Opportunity to see her, in which I resolved to profit by my Friend's Advice, and not betray the Knowledge I had acquired. Sir *Walter* resolved to keep me there a Week after the Cure ; upon which my Father, Mother, and *Mr. Diaper*, *Mr. Archer*, and *Mr. Sharpley*, returned to our House, after the highest Acknowledgments to Sir *Walter* for his Goodness to me, the two last-mentioned Gentlemen having been his Guests, on the same Occasion, their Regard for me having made them too anxious to return Home, from whence the News of my Misfortune had brought them, till I was perfectly out of Danger.

---

## C H A P. XXII.

*Miss Louisa confesses her Regard for him.—Her amiable Sincerity and Prudence.—He is overcome by her Goodness.—They vow eternal Constancy.—Natural Rhapsody on Love.—Their Conjectures of the late Assault.*

I Was overcome with Sadness, the first Time I saw the Charmer of my Soul after her Indisposition, the Roses being quite vanished from her

her Cheeks; and she was grown so thin and pale, she was scarcely to be known. I accosted her with a trembling Accent, and expressed my Sorrow at her late Illness; which she received in so affecting a Manner, and was so overjoyed to see me recovered, that the Roses again revisited her Face, and a kindling Blush of conscious Pleasure overspread her Countenance. Sir *Walter* gave us both Joy on the Occasion, and, in his Way, said a Thousand Things that favoured of his great Affection for his Daughter, and his Regard to me; and, after sitting some Time, left us alone. Now, I was at the greatest Loss imaginable how to behave, and hardly dared lift up my Eyes to her; a thrilling Transport, mingled with Awe, invaded my whole Frame, and, for some Moments, I remained speechless and immoveable; at length assuming Courage, I threw myself at her Feet, and broke Silence in this Manner: Ah! loveliest of Women! justly have I been punished for my Presumption and Temerity, in daring to express the fond Concern of my Heart at your late Danger; but, as your Disposition is Mercy itself, pardon me, dearest Madam, the Crime I was guilty of; 'twas what nothing should ever have prevailed on me to commit, and flowed involuntarily from me, when I feared I was going to lose you! Pity me, and forgive me, and don't banish me from your reviving Presence for ever! Her Astonishment

at this sudden Action was so great, that she could not interrupt me, and I went on: I must confess I love you, but is it my Fault? No, all that see your Perfections do the same: Oh! then accept the humble Adoration I shall ever pay you, which shall never disturb your happy Moments; and, tho' I can't conquer my rash and fatal Passion, I will keep it within such strict Limits, that it shall never in the least offend you. Alas! Madam, is it possible for me longer to conceal the Effects of your wonderful Charms, or to resist the Empire you have over all my Thoughts and Actions! an Empire more acquired by your Virtue, your good Sense, and your Amiability of Soul, than by the exterior Graces of your Person. Let the miserable Situation I am involved in excite your Commiseration; behold me, conscious of having an Heart capable of all the sublime and generous Motions of Love, and yet infinitely enamoured of an Object, that, tho' Reason convinces me, I should be for ever happy in, and endeavour to communicate the highest Satisfaction to; yet she even denies me Hope of the Possession of it, in the most distant Degree: No, I own my ambitious Presumption does not aim so high; suffer me, in Anguish, however, to smile in myself, and say that you do not utterly despise me! Here the Goddess of my Supplications, raising me with her Hand, which I imprinted an hundred burning Kisses upon, before it could be withdrawn;

withdrawn; and, striving to conceal a Confusion that rendered her still more lovely; broke Silence in this Manner: Were I, Mr. *Thompson*, to consult the prudential, or the political Maxims of my Sex, I should retire from your Declarations, without vouchsafing you any other Answer, than the haughty Disdain you ought to think you have deserved; but let me be a Woman, and yet Proof against her natural Insincerity; 'tis too late to deny to you, since the Cause of my late Illness has been too plain to your Friends, I say, Sir; and here the lovely Face was painted with such a crimson Dye, as just illumines the Horizon when the Sun first streaks the Skies with his ascending Rays! 'Twould be an Insincerity, which my Mind would condemn me for greatly, were I to deny that I have a proper Regard for your Merit, that I esteem your Person, and think myself greatly obliged to you for some Instances of your Friendship to me, which in an Heart like mine, which cannot be obliged, and at the same Time, affect an Insensibility of the Obligation, may have been very forceable Recommendations to me in your Favour. All the native Pride of our Sex, Sir, as I know you to be a Man of Honour, should not withhold me from indulging this Esteem of you to a greater Degree; here a Sigh, unnoted by her dear Self, heaved her generous Breast; but I have ever resolved not to disobey my Father, who, I hope,

hope, will have so much Affection for me, as not to force me to a Match he has often talked of, which will undoubtedly make me the most miserable of Beings : As to my Part, let me own, that, be our Fortunes ever so different, a Gentleman of Mr. *Thompson's* Rectitude of Mind, and Purity of Sentiment, would determine me to follow my Inclinations ; but, Sir, let us say no more of what seems to affect us both so much. Say no more, Madam, I cried, in an Extasy of Transport, after this melting Discovery, say no more, as well you might restrain the Thanksgivings that pour forth from the grateful Mariner, who has unexpectedly landed, after Shipwreck, on some hospitable Shore ; as well the Raptures that proceed from the dying Penitent, when the gleaming Hopes of Mercy have been visiting his departing Soul ; as stem the Torrent of my Acknowledgments, which must, which will have Utterance ! Oh adorable *Louisa* ! you have indeed raised me from Death, to a new, an added Sense of the Importance of my Being, since you interest yourself in my Fate : Forgive me, my angelic Comforter, if in the Wildness of my Transports, I am not able to express myself in sober, temperate Language ! O ye soft Zephyrs, whisper the kind, the tender Accents, of my *Louisa*, in every fanning Breeze that murmurs thro' the Grove ! tell it ye, imitative Ecchoes ! catch the heavenly Sounds, and propagate the  
 Strains

Strains I've heard around ! Oh happy, happy, Youth ! what envied Bliss ! superior Joys are mine ! Let the Pains, the corroding Cares of Mortality, rage as they list, the Idea that the ever-sensible, the blooming Fair, pants for my Welfare, wishes every Blessing that I aspire to share, will bear me safely thro' the gathering Storms ! Here the Workings of my Imagination had so strongly affected me, that my weakened Faculties were no longer able to support them, and I sunk down, without Life, at her Feet ; at which she gave a Shriek, and the Servants ran in to her Assistance, and carried me to Bed, where, when I came to myself, I turned my Eyes about, and saw her sitting by me, with earnest Cares employed for my Recovery. I begged her Pardon for the Disturbance I had given her, as well as my Weakness would permit ; and she sweetly and tenderly desired me to compose myself, for Fear I should indanger another Attack of my Fever, by the Tumults of my Mind. How judiciously did she inculcate to me the Government of our Passions, and urged the future Enjoyment of each other's Company in Safety, as a Reason for my Moderation, for Fear of causing any Suspicions of my Sentiments in her Father and her Cousin, who of late had more than ordinarily pried after every Thing that occurred between us, and began to be a constant, troublesome Guest, whenever we were engaged. Let me, for I can



hide it no longer from you, Mr. *Thompson*, says the dearest and best of Creatures, confess that I have a tender Regard for you ; that I should think myself unhappy with any body else ; and, tho' I have all the Respect and Duty possible for my Father ; yet, I freely own, I should be disobedient if I were ordered to make Choice of the Wretch he, I find, proposes to give me to : For, if he had all the other Qualifications I could wish in a Man, I would chuse for a Companion in Life, yet his natural Brutality of Temper, and the Baseness of his Principles, would render him detestable : No, Sir, nothing but a Similitude of Sentiments, an Union of Souls, a thorough and mutual Liking of each other, can make the Marriage State eligible ; but let me, Mr. *Thompson*, have no Reason to accuse myself of Indiscretion and Weakness in making a Confession so opposite to the general Maxims of my Sex, whose Hypocrisy and Pride, on such Occasions, teach them to hide the Motions of their Hearts, and to take Pleasure in the little servile Complaisance they exact of their Lovers : I am above those mean Arts, and you will be generous enough, I don't doubt, to make a proper Estimation of what I have been tempted to say in your Behalf : We are yet young enough, and Time and Application may render you as agreeable in the Eyes of my Father, for a Son, as you are now for a Friend ; for be assured I will never marry without his Consent,  
any.

any more than I will make myself miserable to please his Humour. Here she ceased, and, raising myself in the Bed, I assured her my Sentiments were, and ever should be, conformable to her's; but excuse me, dearest Madam, if I here protest before Almighty God, that I will never indulge a Thought contrary to my Affection to you, and that, let what good or ill Fortune soever betide me, you, and only you, shall be the Mistress of my Heart. And, says my Angel, with equal Vivacity, in the Presence of the same Being, I here vow, that, if I am not to be allied to you, my Maiden Name shall descend with me to the Grave! I could not forbear kissing her Hand, with inexpressible Ardor, for this infinitely kind Condescension; which with some Reluctance she permitted me to do, and oh! let any Lover, who has been so exquisitely happy, figure the Situation, the blissful Situation I was in at this Time, and he will wonder I could keep my Transports from breaking out into farther Actions of an enamoured, overjoyed, and raptured Soul. Oh! the serene Calm my Bosom now began to feel is inexpressible. Methought I had assumed a new and more improved State of Existence, and soared above the Fetters of Mortality!

Hail, softest, sweetest, most delightful Passion that warms the human Heart! If Virtue, and if Merit dignify thy Triumphs, what real, solid Bliss thou

thou canst impart ! Hail, Guest sublime, all pure and lovely, thou art wisely given by Providence adored, to sooth the Ills of Life ! “ *The cordial Drop* “ *Heav’n in our Cup has thrown,*” to balance all our Pains and numerous Ills : By thee, each sordid Notion is exiled, and every Sentiment refined ; “ *our Miens are fashion’d, and our Tongues are fil’d :*” Charmed with the Love of my adored *Louisa*, I breathed a purer Element, and seem’d, nor only seem’d, but was inspir’d ! The little base Desires indulged before, now sickened in my Thoughts, how mean, how low, how trivial !

*Who to forbidden Joys would rove,  
That knows the Sweets of virtuous Love !*

ADDISON.

The present Ease of my Mind had such an Effect on my Body, that I was soon restored to my pristine Health, and had at the same Time the Pleasure to see my *Louisa’s* Countenance arrayed in her usual Smiles ; the beauteous Vermeil, which had been so long banished, resumed its Seat in her Cheeks, and gave an added Lustre to her Graces. Till this Time she had forgot to inquire into the Manner I received my late Hurts, and the Consequences were to me so salutary, that I even counted the Assault made upon me a Blessing rather than a Misfortune ; but when I happened to say, that I was coming to pay her a Visit, pursuant to a Message

sage

sage I had received from her, she was astonished, and protested she had never sent to me, nay, had, even at that Period, resolved, if possible, to wean herself from my Company, fearful of the Effects of that insinuating Passion that she found had assaulted her Breast. This opened a Field of Conjectures about the Author or Authors of the Cruelties that had been acted upon me, and we could, after long Examination, fix upon no one so likely to have engaged in so rash and base an Attempt, as her Cousin, who, tho' she believed he had little Affection for her, was too much swayed by his Interest to look upon her Regard for me with any Measure of Patience or Forbearance.

---

### C H A P. XXIII.

*She makes him her Confidant.—Her amiable Benevolence and Charity.—She surprises him by a Proof of her Goodness.—Story of an unfortunate Family.—Advice to young Ladies.—He makes a Discovery which he imparts to her.—Her Sentiments of Religion.*

**N**OW, the gladsome Hours flowed in jocund Rounds, and all was Happiness, and all was Love; each conscious Walk, each embowering Shade, was Witness to the blissful Moments I spent in the Conversation, in the Contemplation  
of

of my amiable *Louisa*: Every Day discover'd still more and more Perfections in the Soul of that lovely Maid; I grew quite another Sort of Creature, and was so improved by her Wit and good Sense, that I breathed nothing but generous and noble Sentiments and Desires. It was one smiling Morn, when I was in raptured Accents, speaking my Gratitude and Acknowledgments, that she interrupted me, and, with a Voice that spoke the softest Melody, told me, she was resolv'd to impart all the Pleasure she was now capable of bestowing upon me, and make me the Confidant of some Secrets, that she doubted not would give me heightened Satisfaction; in short, Mr. *Thompson*, I will give you a Specimen of the Manner in which I chuse to spend some Part of my Time, which has given me ineffable Delight, and contains all the Secrecy I ever thought myself oblig'd or inclin'd to observe. My Father's Generosity of Temper yields me an Opportunity, from the Overplus of my own Expences, to diffuse a Number of little benevolent Kindnesses amongst the poor Inhabitants of the neighbouring Villages, whom I endeavour to make as happy as I can, with what Providence has bestow'd upon me. You must know, Sir, I think this one of the most grateful Returns I can make to my Creator, for the Blessings of Abundance and Plenty he has imparted to me; and raises my Mind to an Imitation  
of

of that Beneficence, wherewith he superintends and looks thro' whole Nature, scattering his Blessings, in such Profusion, upon his unworthy Creatures. A Heart that is not susceptible of Humanity and Pity, that does not feel the angelic Transports that glow in the Bosom in relieving Poverty and Distress, and Affliction and Grief, is unworthy the Enjoyment of the common Favours of Providence, and should be ashamed to partake even of the Sun's reviving Influence. I am soon tired with the Folly of my Toilet, any farther than it administers to Neatness and Decency; and the Books you know I generally converse with give added Force to this Disposition I find so natural to me; but above all, that best of Books, which I regard as a Rule for my Salvation, in the strongest Terms inculcates the Necessity of doing Good, and in so sublime a Manner, that a Person must be dead to all Sentiment and Beauty of Expression, to disregard its Precepts. Nay, I will own to you, my *Thompson*, that my Observation of your Turn of Mind to benevolent Principles first opened a Way to admit your Image into my Breast. Come, come, continues she smiling, I'll conduct you to a Scene that will be a Proof of what I have said; so saying, she struck across a Meadow, which terminated the Walk we were in, and rose on one Side into a Hill of some Height, whilst I followed her with silent Admiration; and methought she looked like

one of those ministring Angels, who, we are told, are employed in Acts of Love and Kindness to the fallen Race of Men. *Oh Worth innate! Oh Goodness most extreme!* I was forced to exclaim, what envied Fate is mine! thus to be considered by the fairest, best, and most excellent Pattern of her Sex, adorned with inward Greatness, unaffected Wisdom, and Sanctity of Manners!

At the farther Side of this verdant Eminence, was a small Hovel, which resembled the rustic Dwelling of *Baucis* and *Philemon* of old; and no sooner was our Approach discovered by the Yelping of a small Cur that was frisking in the Sun-shine, and ran crouching to the Feet of *Louisa*, than a comely Woman looked out and approached with a modest Diffidence, mingled with Joy in her Face, and saluted that Lady, in Terms of the utmost Veneration and Respect; to which she replied with an Affability and Good-nature, that was calculated to dissipate the Confusion, that our sudden Appearance seemed to have inspired; and asked, How her Husband did To-day, and then inquired after the rest of her little Family by Name? My Lady, replies the honest Dame, since we had the Honour to receive your comfortable Present Yesterday, which came at a very seasonable Time, my Husband has recovered his Spirits, and is upon the mending Hand. Oh, Madam! you have rendered us truly happy: May every Blessing crown

crown your Wishes for your Goodness ! By this Time we approached the Door, when two or three little Cherubims ran out, and in their pretty, prattling Way welcomed my Adorable, in a Manner that convinced me she had been no Stranger to them ; she took each of them in her Arms, and bestowed Kisses and Caresses upon them without Number ; inquired after the Progress they had made in learning their Books, and rewarded them according to their Proficiency. A Blush of uncommon Satisfaction shone in her Face, Beams of unclouded Joy flashed from her brilliant Eyes, and the whole Family were overcome with boundless Satisfaction. She then inquired into several little Particulars that are wanting in a Family, gave the good Woman some Money, calling her aside for that Purpose, and then, presenting her Hand to me, we departed, and her Departure spread a Gloom upon those Faces that were so moved with Joy before. I was all Admiration, and had never been Partaker of more real Pleasure. Heavens ! what a Dignity, what a Lustre did her Goodness spread around her, and what a fine Effect her Elevation of Mind had upon her native Charms ! You must know, says the dearest Maid, that with a little Assistance and some proper Advice I have saved this poor Family from Destruction, and in that I am doubly repaid, by the Pleasure, the secret Satisfaction it has given me ; not an Acknowledgment I have received, not a sudden



sudden Transport lighted up in those innocent Babies Faces, but has given me more real Bliss than if I had received the greatest Benefit the World could bestow. The Man was a *Londoner*, and came down into these Parts as an Exciseman; but for some Slip or Mistake in his Books was dismissed, about three Months ago, from the Representations of an ill-natured Supervisor; since which, being deprived of his small Salary, he has worked as an Husbandman for my Papa, striving with the greatest Affection to support his Family of a Wife and three Children: As I was walking out one Afternoon with my Woman, I accidentally passed by the House, and heard a terrible Swearing and Scolding within, which was discontinued upon the rustling Noise I made in passing, and the Woman, you have seen, just looked out to see who it was, with her Face swollen with Tears; she dropped me a Courtesy, which I returned by the like, accompanied with a *How d'ye, good Dame?* and, thinking her under some Affliction, inquired if any Misfortune had happened to her? The Woman, who seemed to have a Soul superior to her Appearance, very sensibly answered, that the Detail of her Misfortunes would be too tedious for my Ears, and she feared too affecting to herself to go thro' with any tolerable Decency; but, Madam, continues she, what gives me at present the greatest Uneasiness is, that my poor Husband, unused to want, has soured the best  
of

of Tempers by dwelling too much on the Thoughts of the Hardships he has met with, and grows cross and peevish to his Family; whereas I could suffer the greatest Extremities, without complaining, in his Society: Indeed our Ills are almost too great to bear! here she burst into unaffected Tears, whilst two or three little Children, almost naked, joined in the mournful Scene. I was struck to the Heart, and by my Endeavours have made their Circumstances more easy, and cloathed them in that Manner you see, and this very Morning have made my Father promise me his first Farm that becomes vacant, which I intend to stock for them, and put it into their Power, by an Honest Application and Industry, to retrieve their Affairs, and be of Service to Society, who had else become a Burden to it: The Husband, eased of his Anxiety, is become mild and Sober again, and the Reflection upon his late Impatience and Repinings against Providence has thrown him into a Disorder, which by the Account of his Wife he is now like to get over. I observed to my Charmer, that I had generally found, that those Persons, who possessed the best natural Dispositions and Talents, were most altered by Misfortunes; whereas a lifeless Clod goes thro' the up Hill and down Hill Accidents of Life, with a settled Uniformity of Behaviour, which, tho' generally counted Wisdom and Philosophy, flows

from a natural Insensibility and Dulness of Constitution.

How happy would the beautiful Part of the Creation become, if, like my *Louisa*, they would bestow a little less Attention upon the Impertinencies of Dress, Visits, and Cards, and strive to adorn their Minds with Wisdom and Knowledge, and to illustrate the Delicacy they are born with, by such a constant Habit of doing Good? How bright an Appearance has Beauty and Virtue united, what a Light they cast upon every Action of their Lives? How insipid, how unlovely are such Pursuits in Women, as they must and often do condemn in our Sex? One would think Avarice, Pride, and Anger, and Peevishness, Resentment and Rage, were Vices only of male Growth, and were not able to fix their Residence in a Female Breast, where Generosity, Complacency, Mercy, Good-nature, Forgiveness, and Serenity only ought to reside: Oh! ye gentle Soothers of human Pains and Inquietudes, copy this Pattern of resplendent Excellency, by which you will fix your Empire still more absolutely in our Souls, and Reason as well as Passion will take a Pride to sacrifice at your Altars, and adore your real and never-fading Charms! Then we shall truly sing with the Poet,

*You've in you all that we believe of Heaven!  
Amazing Brightness, Purity and Truth,  
Eternal Joy and everlasting Love!*

As

As we advanced in our Return to the House, casting my Eyes at some Distance, I perceived the Squire, her Cousin, talking very earnestly with two Fellows, who had no very promising Appearance, which I made her take Notice of, and she as well as myself was startled at their Looks, which she thought had somewhat villainous in them; when, casting up their Eyes, they discovered our Approach, they seemed surpris'd and shifted their Ground, I followed them with my Eyes till I had quite lost Sight of them. Whether or no our Knowledge of his Disposition, or the Conjectures we had formed of his foregoing Guilt, worked up our Terror, I can't justly tell; but, in short, we had Reason to think he was meditating no Good. I had Presence of Mind enough to conceal my own Fears, and to calm the Tumults of my *Louisa's* Breast, who was perfectly put into a trembling Fit by her Prefagement of some sinister Design against our Quiet. At Supper, where he was present, I eyed him with more fixed Attention than usual, and thought I perceived a visible Confusion and Trouble in his Countenance, which he strove to conceal, but was forced to leave the Room abruptly. That Night, Sir *Walter* being engaged at a Friend's House, I had an Opportunity of spending intirely with my Angel; and, amongst other Discourse, equally productive of such Discoveries of the Knowledge and Reading, as astonish'd me, I

ventured to ask her, whether she was so rigidly bigotted to the Doctrines of the *Roman Catholic Faith*, as to admit of no Salvation out of the Pale of that Church? Let me treasure up for ever the remarkable Answer of this divine Creature! I expected, my dear *Thompson*, that some Time or other we should fall upon this Discourse, and am prepared to resolve you of my Opinions; that I am not bigotted, you might have learnt from your dear Mother, as I have constantly for several Years past joined in the public Worship, at our Parish Church, where I have been greatly edified by the excellent Discourses of your Father. As to this or that Mode of Worship, I think every one ought to be allowed to follow the Dictates of Conscience; but I must own the Simplicity of the *Church of England*, in her Rites and Doctrines, seems more agreeable to Scripture, than any other I have considered; and my Retirement in the Country, and the Method of my Education, under a worthy Mother, of large and charitable Notions, gave me, together with a proper Choice of Books, which she left behind her, and the Use of a much better Collection of your Father's, which I had the Liberty to send for any Book from, an Opportunity of turning my Thoughts to those Things, more than is common for one of my tender Sex. A Priest of the *Roman Church* used to visit our Family, but was soon disgusted at our conversing so much  
with

with *Heretics*, as he called them; but the Truth was, because we did not make him the Repository of our Secrets, and act implicitly by his Directions. Two Things, amongst those of that Persuasion, shock me more than any Thing else, not that I believe all the Stories that are told in our Books of Martyrology, which are the Spirit of Persecution, and their Maxim, *That no Faith is to be kept with Heretics*.—In Contradiction to which, I'll stick to what was said by the great Mr. *Pope*, another *Roman Catholic*, of a charitable allowing Spirit, in one of his Letters; and, if I remember right, his Words are these: “ *Fire and Sword, and Fire and Faggot, are equally my Aversion; I pray for different Sects and different Parties, with the same Sincerity I pray for myself; I think to be a Lover of my Country is a glorious Elogy, but that it is a much greater to be a Lover of Mankind.*” And I believe the Almighty esteems no particular Opinions in Comparison to the truly good Man, who may be said to be a Christian at large. As Things are managed at present by the Advocates on every Side of the Question, Religion seems to have the least Share in their Researches, which is a Thing I imagine quite simple, and her Duties comprized, according to our Saviour himself, in a very few Words; but, alas! tho’ she is, as *Rowe* says,

*Divinely pure and simple from all Arts,  
They clau'd and dress'd her, like a common Mistress,  
The Object of their Fancies?*

I stood amazed at the Penetration of my excellent Mistress, and the Judgment she shewed, and the Facility she spoke with, upon Points of so puzzled and abstruse a Nature,

---

## C H A P. XXIV.

*Mr. Diaper receives Letters from his Father, with a Letter inclosed from Prig.—Odd Account of Speculist.—News arrives from Archer and Sharpley.—Unhappy End of Mr. Profody.—His Discourse with his Mother, in Relation to Louisa.—He receives a Letter of Caution by an unknown Hand.*

**T**WAS with the utmost Difficulty I prevailed on myself to leave my blissful Abode, and to comply with the repeated Requests of my Friend, to return to my Father's; which, however, at length, I was obliged to do, taking the most tender Adieu of the Charmer of my Soul! When I came Home, every one rejoiced at the Vivacity, and lively Spirit, I brought with me; all being  
easy

easy within, and, the great Business of Love settled upon so unexpectedly happy a Footing, I indulged all the Jollity and Mirth of my Soul. My Friend, to whom I imparted all that had passed, congratulated me in the sincerest Manner; and now, says he, I don't doubt, my *Joey*, but we shall be both extremely happy, and may promise ourselves a Life of constant Felicity, which I hope will be spent, for the future Part of it, in a Harmony and Cordiality between us, equal to that we have maintained hitherto in the First; our Joys, our Griefs, mutual and the same: Ah! how blind a little flattering Success renders unhappy Mortals to the Strokes of ill Fortune, that they are every Minute liable to, and which burst the airy Bubbles of their delusive, deceitful Expectations!

A Day or two after my Arrival, Mr. *Diaper* received a Packet of Letters from *London*, by the Supercription of which we immediately knew it to be from my Master, who had not wrote to either of us before, tho' my Father and he had constantly corresponded; giving, as a Reason for it, that he would not disturb the young People in their Diversions, by giving them the Trouble to write; notwithstanding which, we had frequently paid our Duties both to him and my Mistress. I was alarmed at this, greatly fearing it was a Summons of us up to Town; and nothing could at present have grieved me more than Absence from my *Louisa*.



Upon opening it, there was a Letter for Mr. *Diaper*, and one for me, from his Father, and another directed to us both, which I discovered in an Instant to be from Mr. *Prig*. Both our Letters from my dear and worthy Master were full of Affection to me, as well as his Son; but we were extremely shocked, when we understood that Mr. *Traffic*, a Merchant at *Bristol*, had failed, whereby, at the lowest Computation, he was become Loser above twelve Thousand Pounds. In relating this Circumstance he had said all that a Man of Sense, and a Christian, who was acquainted with the unforeseen Accidents of Life, could say to moderate his Son's Affliction; but it was a Blow he could hardly bear with Fortitude, as it in some Degree disconcerted the Schemes of Happiness he had formed for himself with the lovely Miss *Bellair*; in short, tho' it was but a Trifle, when weighed against my Master's other Possessions, 'twas a Loss that could not but be very heavily felt, and would, of Consequence, oblige us to retrench our extensive Dealings within a narrower Compass. I was not without my Share of Concern for myself also, that is so natural, as I knew it would render it more difficult for my Friend to bring me into a Share of the Business, which, on Account of my Pretensions to *Louisa*, I was become more and more desirous of: However, as there was no Remedy, we gave Ear to the consoling Arguments of my  
Father,

Father; who represented Things to us in a most philosophical and reasonable Light, and convinced us of the Error and Folly of laying such unavoidable Misfortunes to Heart. My Master concluded, that he found our Presence very necessary, as he, or one of us, must go down to *Bristol*; and gave us an Order to prepare for our Return to *London* in three Weeks, or a Month at farthest. The Letter from *Prig* was as follows:

DEAR FRIENDS,

**T**HQ' I reflect with Pleasure upon the Enjoyments you participate of in *Yorkshire*, and am ideally a Sharer in every Satisfaction you feel; yet I am more pleased, in understanding that your Principal has sent you an *Habeas Corpus*, to remove your Bodies up to *London*, which has been to me a dull and lifeless Place, ever since your Absence. Mr. *Diaper* (to whose Recommendations I must own myself very much obliged for a great Increase of Practice) has made so thorough a Convert of me, that my former Companions yield me no Delight; and the Ways I formerly pursued are grown dull and insipid; and let me assure you, I have not kicked a Watchman, bilked a Bawdy-house, or snored at *Tom King's*, for above these two Months past. What the Devil can you find so agreeable amongst the *Tikes* of *Yorkshire*, to detain you so long from your Friends; Are purling Streams, ro-

scute Bowers, fallow Lawns, and painted Meads,  
 stronger Charms than we can procure to entertain  
 you? For Shame sake haste away, and join us ;  
 for Pity-sake do ; and let me sing, as a Friend of  
 mine once did, with a little Alteration :

*Yorkshire*, tho' full of wanton Glee,  
 Our op'ning Pleasures vye with thee ;  
 Thy barren Wilds the Stupid please,  
 But Musick warbles thro' our Trees :  
 See *Ranelagh*, and see *Vauxhall*,  
 The joyous Glass, the sprightly Ball ;  
 Come join and quaff the sparkling Bowl,  
 Which raises, mends, and fires the Soul.

*Your affectionate Friend,*

RICHARD PRIG.

P. S. The most extraordinary Piece of News  
 I can send you, is, that that Man of moral Rec-  
 titude, Philosopher *Speculist*, has been cast in  
 2000*l.* Damages, for criminal Conversation with  
 the Wife of a Bosom Friend ; and, on Non-pay-  
 ment, has been obliged to go to the *Fleet-Prison*.

We could not help smiling at our Friend *Prig's*  
 concise and *Laconic* Epistle, and his Dash of  
 Poetry, which exactly spoke the Temper of the  
 Man ; and that, together with the Arrival of our  
 Friends *Archer* and *Sharpley*, contributed to expel  
 the Gloom that had overspread our Minds. They  
 had each of them received a Letter from his Son,

which they communicated to us. *Tam Archer* went on with great Success in his mercantile Employment; and poor *Yack Sharpley* had met with a great many Misfortunes upon his Station; but by the Death of the Captain, and all the three Lieutenants, had received the Commission of Third Lieutenant, which fell to him by Rotation, and had been confirmed such by the Lords of the Admiralty; they were both in good Health, which could not fail to communicate a great deal of Pleasure to me, and naturally led me, which I had never thought of before, to enquire after our old Master Mr. *Prossy*, who I found had been dead near two Years, and that his Wife died a Year before him: His Death was occasioned by a flogging Bout, which he too unmercifully bestowed upon the Posteriors of a Gentleman's Son, who, in Revenge, had harrassed him for his Nonjuring Principles, to such a Degree, that, upon refusing the Oaths, he was prohibited by the Archbishop from teaching a public School, and died of a broken Heart, leaving above 1500*l.* to his Daughter, Mrs. *Harrore*, who still was living, and well, with her Husband. My two old Companions had mentioned me with so much Affection in their Letters, that I thought myself obliged to sit down to write to them; which I did accordingly, and committed my Epistles to the Care of their Fathers, to be sent with theirs.

My dear Mother, one Morning, taking me into her Closet, began, in a rallying Way, to inquire after Miss *Louisa*, and into the Particulars of our Correspondence. I was too much convinced of her Prudence and Affection, and her Regard to that amiable Lady, to make a Secret to her of the Progress I had made in my Love, and the happy Situation my Heart was in; mingling my Account with such Encomiums upon the Object of my Adoration, and such involuntary Raptures, and Elevation of Expression, that she could not help perceiving how nearly I was affected with what I said. The Thoughts, tho' distant, of this Alliance, gave her exquisite Pleasure; and tho' she gave me many Cautions, to moderate my extravagant and over-bearing Tumults of Soul, yet she concluded in assuring me, that the dear Creature had such just Notions, and so sincere a Regard to whatever she said, that no human Means were ever likely to disturb our Union, and, no doubt, Providence had determined we should be happy in each other. She knew too well the Delicacy of my Father's Temper, to need any Injunctions to keep the Matter a Secret from him; and promised me, that in my Absence at *London* she would endeavour more and more to cultivate the good Opinion and Esteem that *Louisa* had conceived of me: I embraced the excellent Woman with unfeigned Transport, and methought this Confidence,

I had

I had reposed in her, made her more my Mother than she was before.

When we came down Stairs, a Letter was given me, which had been left by a Countryman; the Direction was almost unintelligible, but, opening it, I found it to this Effect:

SIR,

**I** Give youe these Notis to take Caree of youer Selfe, for Squier *Riche* has resolved to ha youer Harts Bloud, and I am one of thouse hir'd to dispatch you; and you may be sure, if you can bee catch'd, you will note iscap, as you did the Time afor. I honor youer Faather, which is the Reason of these Notis

*From your Wellwisher,*

A. B.

Before alwayes to go well armud.

This Advice startled me, as it convinced me that this base and cowardly Wretch had resolved to get rid of me, one Way or other; and I communicated it to Mr. *Diaper*, who determined I should never go to Sir *Walter's*, without him in my Company, and both well armed; upon Consideration, we resolved not to discover the Matter to that Gentleman, till we could, by some Accident or other, get one of his Emissaries into our Hands, to confront him, as he was so much beloved by him:

him: We deplored the Unhappiness he was under to be so blinded to his wicked Disposition, as to entertain a Thought of sacrificing his excellent Daughter to so perfectly brutal a Villain. I should have sought him out in the first Motions of my Rage, and, upon his declining a fair Combat, have pinned him to the Earth, had not my Friend represented the Imprudence of such a Resolution, which obliged me to desist.

---

## C H A P. XXV.

*Sir Walter surprises the two Lovers.—His Behaviour thereon.—Is forbid the House.—They correspond by Letter.—Their Correspondence discovered.—Her Woman discharged.—She is privately conveyed away.*

I Communicated the foregoing Letter the next Day to my *Louisa*; and, at the same Time, informed her, that I must be torn from all the Pleasure I enjoyed in her loved Society, for some Time; giving her an Account of the Reasons for our unexpected Departure from *Yorkshire*: She condoled with my Friend in his Loss; but said so many inspiring Things to comfort him, that Grief soon fled, being driven away by the Influence of her persuasive Eloquence and enlivening Smiles. When

he

he had sat with us some Time, he retired to seek Mr. *Sherphy*, who had also accompanied us, promising to call for me in the Evening. My *Louise* was greatly pleased with the Precautions I took to bring my Friend with me, and insisted I should never come there, or go any where else, without him: Mean and low designing Men, says she, are more artful than a Man of a generous Spirit will permit himself to become, even for his own Safety; and no Wretch so low, but may, one Time or other, find an Opportunity to wreck his Malice and Ill-will on the Person he hates. Her Apprehensions cast her into so profound a Melancholy, that I was alarmed, and blamed myself for giving her so much Pain, by letting her into the Secret of the Letter; it even operated so far, as to draw a Shower of Tears from her fair Eyes: I clasped her tenderly in my Arms, and she reclined her lovely Face upon my Shoulder, whilst I endeavoured, with my utmost Art, to sooth her forboding Fears. Just as we were in this Posture, unluckily Sir *Water* opened the Door of the Room, with such Suddenness, that we could not adjust ourselves, before he had taken a full View of our Attitude; and, after a silent Look of Indignation, returned the Way he came. I must own I was never so discomposed in my Life, and my charming Mistress trembled from Head to Foot: We knew his obstinate, over-bearing, resolute Temper too well,



well, to doubt the Consequences of this Discovery ; and our Apprehensions were not permitted to have a long Scope, for, in less than twenty Minutes, a Footman brought me this short Note :

SIR,

**A**FTER what I have just beheld, you will not think it strange that I desire you forthwith to depart my House, and never to enter my Doors again.

WALTER RICH.

In the Condition I was, I hardly knew what I did ; but, to gain a few Minutes Time for Reflection, I wrote the following Answer :

DEAR SIR,

**I** Beg the Favour to be introduced to you, and that you would indulge me with two or three Words in my Defence ; you may think me to blame, when, really, I am far from any Design to disturb your Peace, but would rather lose my Life, than cause so kind and good a Friend a Moment's Uneasiness. *I am, Sir,*

*Your most affectionate humble Servant,*

JOS. THOMPSON.

The Footman told me, with great Concern, that his Master and the 'Squire were together, and that he never saw him in so great a Passion before.

Lord,

Lord, Sir, says the Fellow, very innocently, I hope you are not going to fight; we all love you, and hope no Mischief will happen between you and Master. Whilst he was gone, *Louisa* told me she believed it would be in vain to strive to bring him to Reason at present, and advised me to go; she rather, as she hoped my Absence, and what she had to say to him, would calm his Rage; but, let what will happen, *Fidèle* (that was the Name of her Maid) shall bring you a-Line To-morrow, if she can without Suspicion: Depend upon it, added the lovely Creature, I will never forfeit my Vow. I was going to return her my Acknowledgments, in the tenderest Manner, when the Footman returned, with another written Message, to this Effect:

“ I would have you quit these Territories this  
 “ Minute, for I can’t answer for it else,  
 “ that I may not act somewhat towards  
 “ you that would violate the common  
 “ Rights of Hospitality; Hospitality did I  
 “ say, nothing of that Kind is due to a  
 “ Deceiver, an Hypocrite, and a Villain.  
 “ W. R.”

Finding it in vain to persist, I took a tender Adieu of my heavenly *Louisa*; and we both mingled our Tears together, apprehensive of what we had to go thro’, which filled my Soul with a gloomy Train of horrid Ideas.

I desired

I desired the same Footman to deliver him this Answer, however, which was all the Distraction I was under would suffer me to write :

SIR,

**Y**OU are certainly seduced to your own Unhappiness, by the false and malicious Insinuations of that base Wretch your Nephew, who has, for what Reason I cannot tell, even attacked my Life by Ruffians, and is meditating another Exploit of the same Kind. Believe me, Sir, your excellent Daughter has done nothing contrary to the Rules of Prudence and Virtue, Discretion and Duty ; and you will find you have greatly wronged

*Your affectionate humble Servant,*

JOS. THOMPSON.

P. S. I hope, Sir, if only for the Sake of your own Peace of Mind, when your Passion is a little abated, you will hear what I have to say. What I have hinted about your Kinsman I am ready at any Time to prove.

Oh ! what Pangs I suffered at this cruel Period, the Source to me of so many succeeding Misfortunes ; a thousand Times I was near laying violent Hands upon myself for my Indiscretion, and then again I excused myself by the Consideration, that I thought Sir *Walker* Abroad as well as his Daughter, he having left Word, he should

should not return till Evening, which was the Reason we were caught in so unguarded a Manner: Thence I could not help reflecting, that his saying he should be out so long was only a Feint, in order to surprize us, the Source of which I immediately concluded to be the *Squire*. I was in an hundred Minds to return and take speedy Vengeance on him, or die in the Attempt; but then the Thoughts of my *Louisa's* Displeasure checked the rash Design, and the Danger of farther irritating her Father against her. Wretch, that I was, I could not help exclaiming, to imagine Heaven would be propitious to me, stained with the Guilt of a thousand Crimes and Enormities! Could I think that it had destined me so much Perfection, without throwing innumerable Difficulties and Discouragements in my Way, as a just Punishment for my Presumption? No, I see plainly this is only a Taste of the Miseries it has in Reserve for me.

When I got Home, I entered privately, and threw myself all bathed in Tears upon my Bed, where I gave full Play to the Melancholy and Distraction of my Breast, till my very Brain became disordered; and God knows how far my Desperation would have carried me, but for my Friend, who accidentally came thro' my Apartment, which was the Way to his own. If he was surprized to see me at Home so soon, he was much more amazed to see the Condition I was in, and with great Precipitation

Precipitation demanded the Reason of the Extravagancies he heard and saw me guilty of; which when I had acquainted him with, he sympathised with me, on this unlucky Misfortune, in a truly sensible Manner; but put me in Mind of the Folly of resigning myself to fruitless and unavailing Complaints and Tears; that I ought to wait with Patience till I heard from *Louisa*; and that possibly from her Intelligence Ways might be thought of to bring Sir *Walter* into a better Temper, and, by exposing the Villainy of his Nephew, open his Eyes to all the Absurdities he was guilty of, in so steadily persisting to bring about what would render his amiable Daughter so infinitely and woefully wretched. I became somewhat calmer at these encouraging Words, and composed myself, as well as I could, in Expectation of hearing from the Idiot of my Soul, counting every Moment an Age till I was convinced of her Welfare and Safety. At length *Fidèle* arrived, and brought me a Letter from my Angel, which I kissed with Transport; and hugged the poor Girl in a joyful Manner, over and over again, and thought I had great Reason to be comforted, when I found the Contents as follow:

SIR,

AFTER you left the House, my Father called me into his Chamber, and, with less Passion than I expected, taxed me with indulging an Affection

Affection for you, which crossed all his Measures; inveighed against you in the bitterest Manner, and commanded me never to think of or speak to you more. In the best Terms I could (tho' I was greatly concerned and frightened) I endeavoured to moderate his Suspicions; but my Sincerity, and the Regard I pay to Truth, would not suffer me to deny the Impressions I had received in your Favour, tho' at the same Time I assured him I would never think of you in a Way he should disapprove, or enter into any farther Engagements with you than were perfectly innocent. This raised his Fury to a Pitch that made me tremble; and he told me, that he intended I should have a Regard only to his Nomination, and commanded me to look upon my Cousin, as a Man he was resolved to make my Husband very shortly. I fell on my Knees, and vowed I could not entertain the most distant Idea of the Wretch he mentioned with Patience, and found my Posture and the Tears I shed had somewhat moved him; and, taking Advantage of the lucky Moment, drew from him a Promise never to force my Hand where I could not bestow my Heart, I protesting I would not marry another than he should approve. He, however, firmly persisted in his Resolves, that I should never correspond or speak to you, to which, alas! I gave a silent Approbation, on Pain of being denied the little Liberties I enjoy. Ah, Mr. Thompson,

son, what a Situation am I in, divided thus, between Love and Duty? Yet let me once more assure you, that you, and only you, can, or shall, employ the Thoughts of

*Your* LOUISA.

Oh! how I, raptured, kissed the dear Name, that subscribed these tender, sensible, and moving Lines, and wrote with great Haste this Answer, which *Fidèle* immediately returned with to her Lady :

*Dearest and most amiable* CREATURE,

**W**HAT Miseries I have suffered to this blissful Moment, in which you so generously repeat your Vows of Constancy and Affection, Words are too faint to describe! Ah, charming *Louisa*, can there be greater Torment to a Man that loves as I do, than to be denied the Happiness of seeing and conversing with the adorable Object of his Passion? The Torments, that the Damned are said to undergo, is a feeling Consciousness of the Joys and ineffable Delights of the Blessed, and a Privation of the Participation of those Joys for ever, which so strongly is working in their Ideas. Where, alas! now are the improving Pleasures that flowed over my Soul, when I heard my *Louisa's* heavenly Accents, her melodious, melting Strains? Oh, I am tortured, even to Madness, at the painful Reflection of being deprived of thy Sight, without Hope of returning to it again! But  
sure,

sure, Heaven, who must be propitious to so pure an Image of its own Perfections, will at length accord to thy Wishes, and make thee happy as thy Virtues and Goodness deserve. My lovely Fair, preserve the Remembrance of me in your Mind, till I can some Way or other find a Way to soothe your cruel Father's relentless Rage; and let me, at least in this endearing Manner, frequently converse with my all of Happiness I e'er desire. The Distraction of my Mind is too great to write more distinctly; but believe I am ever thy most tender, faithful, and eternally constant Adorer, whilst I can subscribe the Name of

JOSEPH THOMPSON.

I pestered *Fidele* with an hundred Questions, whilst I was writing, breaking off and writing again, every Minute, with such sudden Starts of Joy and Movements of Sorrow, that the faithful Creature was affected, even to Tears, and begged me, for her Lady's Sake, to be more composed and calm, which I promised her I would. I was now ever, in Private, pouring out my Complaints, and setting forth my Passion to the Object of my Wishes. *Fidele* had scarce Time to do any Thing else than to carry our Messages and Letters to each other, which she did with so much Willingness and Affection, that the Presents I forced upon her, and which she ever modestly would have declined accepting,



cepting, were but a poor Reward for her Labours ; tho' her Lady also, whom she had been brought up with, was profusely generous and grateful to her. Our Intercourse was carried on thus for some Days without Interruption, and I received fresh Proofs of the Consideration this delightful Woman had for me ; her Letters were filled with such exalted Sentiments, such refined Notions of Things, that my Admiration was almost equal to my Love, and I died with languishing Desires to see her : This distant Way of conversing only served to heighten these Longings ; but I soon was robbed of even this remaining Consolation, this only Refuge from Despair ; and one fatal Moment involved me in a Series of Miseries that were dreadfully severe. The 'Squire, whose Suspicions made him ever watchful, and who was quite incensed at the total Loss of the Favour of *Louisa*, who would never sit a Moment with him but when her Father was in Company, and gave him every Day fresh Marks of her Detestation and Abhorrence, could not fail to observe the frequent Journies *Fidèle* made from Home, and, imparting his Surmises to Sir *Walter* that she brought and carried Letters to and from his Daughter and me, they agreed to watch her Motions more narrowly ; and one Evening, in her Return, they forcibly inspected her Pockets, and found a Letter from me, full of the Expressions of my Love and Gratitude to my Charmer for her  
Kindness

Kindness and Sensibility of my Sufferings; which having read, Sir *Walter* loaded his Daughter with Reproaches and cruel Upbraidings, and even went so far in his Fury, as to vow Revenge upon her *Minion*, as he called me, where-ever he found me; and immediately, notwithstanding all her Tears and Supplications, turned *Fidèle* out of his House, who came to me in the utmost Agony and Distraction, at being thus forced to leave her dear Mistress. It was now that my Rage exceeded all Bounds; I raved and tore in so violent a Manner, that my Friend could not abate by all his kind Lessons of Advice and Caution. I determined to seek this Villain, this Bane to my future Expectations, and sacrifice him to the Injuries of my *Louisa*; and accordingly was going to put my Design in Execution, having got over two or three Fields on my Way to Sir *Walter's*, armed with a Pair of Pistols, one of which I resolved he should make Choice of, or I'd put him to Death without Mercy, when I was accosted by a Footman, whom I knew to be Sir *Walter's*, and who in a trembling Manner gave me this Billet :

DEAR SIR,

I Have just Time to send you Word by this compassionate Domestic, that I am now going to be conveyed to my Aunts in *Somersetshire*, the Coach waiting at the Gate for that Purpose.—

VOL. I.

M

Heavens,

Heavens, what Outrages have I endured ! But, be sure you behave with Prudence, and don't suffer yourself to be transported to any Rashness, for, depend upon it, nothing shall ever force me to be other than your

LOUISA.

I fear my Tears have rendered this Scroll unintelligible ; — take Care of my poor *Fidèle*, and hope happier Moments.

---

## C H A P. XXVI.

*He pursues after her.—Meets 'Squire Rich.—Dares him to Combat, which he Coward-like refuses.—Prepares to punish him, but he escapes.—Is overtaken.—He fires at him, and brings him down.—Is knocked off his Horse by one of the 'Squire's Attendants himself.—Found by certain Passengers in a bloody Condition, who convey him to their House in their Chariot.—Is known by a Lady, whom he in vain endeavours to recollect.*

**M**Y Rage, notwithstanding these Injunctions of my *Louisa*, was too great for Expression, and choked up my Voice, and my Breast swelled with boiling Choler : I just had Patience to inquire if the Coach was gone, which he resolved me

me in the Affirmative, and to ask which Road it had taken; which I no sooner understood, than without a single Word more I returned Home, and not entering the House to speak to my Friend, or poor *Fidèle*, I saddled my Horse, and, mounting, galloped the Way I had been directed, breathing nothing but Revenge and Bloodshed, whilst Tears of Grief and bitter Anguish ran plentifully down my Cheeks. I rode with all the Speed my Horse's Legs would permit for two or three Hours, when I heard the Tread of Horses, and, to my inexpressible Delight, soon descried the Squire and two Attendants, who were returning back with great Expedition for somewhat they had forgot to take in the Hurry. I drew a Pistol from my Holsters, and crossing the Road, which was not very broad, stood prepared to retard his farther Progress; and he no sooner saw me, than he stopped short, and turned pale at the tremendous Spectacle, whilst I cried out, "Villain, dismount, and prepare to give me Satisfaction for the Injuries you have heaped upon me, and the worthiest and best of Creatures, and declare where you have carried the Chamber of my Soul, or this Minute is the last I will suffer you to breathe that Air you have poisoned by your notorious Crimes." Before he could well recover himself to answer, one of the Servants, equally fearful of what might happen to himself, said, that the Squire was not concerned

in the taking away his young Lady, who was a great many Miles onwards; under the Care of Sir *Walter*, and that he hoped I would not do any *Mischief*. Without attending to what the Servant said, I reiterated my Resolution to his Master, who, clapping Spurs to his Horse, with a rapid Pace rushed by me, followed by one of the Attendants; which I could not prevent, but immediately followed him, and my Horse, having the greatest Shate of Heels, soon overtook the flying Enemy, who roared out, *for God's Sake to spare him, and he'd be my Friend for ever*; but, before the Words could well reach my Ears, I fired at him, and he fell from his Horse; upon which, endeavouring to dismount, I received from behind a Blow on the Side of the Temples with the Butt-end of an Horse-Whip, which laid me senseless amongst the Horse's Feet; but was soon brought to myself, by a Number of Kicks and Blows given with an Intention to deprive me of Life by the recovered Squire, whose Fright only had occasioned his Fall, and who frequently commanded his Men to ride after my Horse and get the other Pistol, for he was resolved to butcher the Dog, before he left him. All this I heard distinctly, till a Stroke, like the first, again put me into the same State as before. How long I might lie motionless and dead to all Sense of my Misfortunes, I cannot possibly determine; but, when I recovered

vered my shattered Ideas, the Torture of my Mind, the oppressive Grief of my Soul, was too big for Utterance, and only broke Way in Groans, and Sighs, and Tears: I strove to get upon my Legs, but, alas! found myself too weak, with Loss of Blood, and too much bruised, to attempt it without Assistance. Thus then I lay in Expectation some compassionate Passenger might peradventure pass that Way, and in Charity convey me to some House where I might get Assistance to return Home. Oh! how violent was my Distraction, and what Havock it made on my weakened and labouring Faculties? How mournfully the Image of my *Louisa* floated before my View, in vain imploring my Succour and Assistance? Then, again, the Wretch, who had just left me in this horrid Condition, called up all the Fierceness and Rage inspired by his numerous Injuries and Wickednesses: Yes, I cried with a faltering Voice, no Place, tho' ever so sacred, shall screen thee from my Resentments; even from the Arms of thy Uncle will I drag thee, and inflict upon thee the Death thou so well deservest, for thy Outrages against the best and most lovely of her Sex! These Thoughts gave me Ease, methought, and allayed my Torments, when a Chariot, with some Domestic on Horseback, appeared in View; and I was no sooner descried, than a Gentleman in it, of a Mien that commanded Respect, alighted, and, approaching

me, asked me, with great Concern, how I had come by such barbarous Usage, the Marks of which were so visible? I essayed to speak once or twice, but my Voice failed me; and the Gentlemen, ordered his Servants with great Care to put me into the Chariot, gave them Directions to drive gently to his House, which was two or three Miles farther, and where we arrived in about an Hour and an half, and found he had got Home before to prepare Matters for my Reception: I was taken out of the Chariot, and carried up to Bed; but, as I was supporting thro' the Hall, I heard a female Voice, the Sound of which seemed very familiar to my Ears, exclaim, Oh, Heavens! what do I see, it is Mr. *Thompson*! I turned my Head about, but the Lady had suddenly retired, leaving me in a Maze of Conjectures, who this could be who had expressed such a Concern, and was so well acquainted with my Name and Person.

## C H A P. XXVII.

*The great Care that is taken of him by the strange Gentleman.—He has a remarkable Dream which operates towards his Recovery.—Understands who his generous Benefactor is, who amazes him, by acknowledging a Favour done to his Lady.*

**M**Y Eyes could only intimate to my generous Preserver, what a grateful Sense I entertained of the Affiduity and Care he shewed for my Safety and Recovery ; for, tho' my Senses were entirely perfect, my Loss of Blood had been so great, as to deny my Tongue the Exercise of its Office. A Surgeon being sent for, he examined my Wounds and Bruises, and found them considerable enough to put my Life to some Hazard : What he most apprehended was, that a Fever would ensue ; and therefore, after he had dressed me, he gave strict Charge that I should be kept as calm and composed as possible, and that nobody should speak to me, or engage me to talk, on any Account. His Orders were obeyed ; but the Torments of my harrassed and distracted Mind had well nigh baffled all his Skill : The Idea of my *Louisa's* Loss, and the Force that might be used to make her unhappy, with my total Ignorance of the Place she was carried to, on one Hand, and



my Rage and Resentment against the Wretch who had used me so barbarously, on the other, allowed me not a Moment's Interval of Rest. Ten thousand crude and indigested Schemes I formed in my distorted Imagination, to rescue my Mistress, and to punish my Enemy: Then, again, the Absence of my Friend, and the Situation my sudden and rash Disappearing would put my Father and Mother into, gave me inconceivable Pain. Wearied at length with a constant Succession of these Thoughts, I fell into a Slumber, in which, methought, I beheld my lovely Maid advancing to meet me in a Meadow, diversified on every Side with the shining Gifts that *Flora* bestows on the most delightful Season of the Year: As we approached each other, we discovered, to our mutual Surprise, a deep and rapid Stream, which our first Transports had hindered us from perceiving. Methought we wept at this unexpected Difficulty, and I was going to plunge myself into the Waves, the more speedily to embrace the Charmer of my Soul, when, with her usual, placid Smile, she repressed my Eagerness, by the following Words: Oh! my *Thompson*! think, with your wonted good Sense and Patience, before you attempt so fatal an Action; if you should meet with Death here, in my Sight, think what instant Misery I should be reduced to: Rather let us explore the Head of this River, or search on each Side, if, per  
Chance,

Chance, we may meet with some Bridge or Boat, that will give us a Passage to each other's Embraces. I obeyed the sweet Phantom, and, looking up, perceived, at a little Distance, a small Barque, which was moored to a Tree, on my Side of the Stream, which I made to with the utmost Joy; and, entering, immediately turned it adrift, and prepared to cross to the other Shore; which I had no sooner reached, within the Boat's Length, than I gave a sudden Spring, in order to get to Land the sooner; but missed my Footing, and fell into the Water, whence, when I had got out, all wet and tired with the Fatigue I had undergone, I had lost the Sight of my *Louisa*, which I began to bewail with all the passionate Gestures and Language that such a Disappointment could inspire; when I heard her Voice calling me, by Name, from the Bank of the River I had just left to meet her; Ah! my much loved Youth! how unhappy your violent Temper makes us! Providence, ever propitious to those who put their Trust in it, and, with Reason and Calmness, endeavour to attain its Blessings, never favours the rash and passionate Murmurs and Attempts of the Unthinking and Fool-hardy! How often have you promised me to accord to my Desires, and, reposing Confidence in the Truth I have vowed you, wait with Patience and Resignation the Dispensations of Heaven in our Favour; farewell;—It is denied me to satisfy

our ardent Wishes, till you behave with more Temperance and Moderation than you have hitherto; yet, at length, I must believe we shall be happy. Here the endearing Room disappeared from my View, and I waked in an Agony of Grief and Sorrow: However, this Dream had a sudden Effect upon my Mind, that aided my Physician's Skill; I looked upon it as a Warning from Above, to be less violent in my Desires; and recollecting how well it tallied with what my *Lotisa* had always inculcated, and particularly in her last melancholy Letter, I grew more composed; and, in two or three Days, was so altered, as to be able to talk and sit up in my Bed. I was prodigiously curious to know what kind Hands I had fallen into, and particularly who the Lady might be, who had expressed herself with so much seeming Emotion at the Sight of me. I had seen no Female since I had been there; but an elderly Matron, who was my Nurse; and the Gentleman, who seemed more than ordinarily tender of me, was very cautious how he spoke to me, for Fear of giving me any Disturbance. I now ventured to ask the good Woman, my Attendant, the Name of my Benefactor; which she satisfied me in, by letting me know it was 'Squire Goodwill, and that his Seat, where I then was, was called *Mount Christian*; by which I understood, for I had before heard of the Family, that I was about thirty-six Miles from my Father's,

whither I determined the next Day to get a Message carried to Mr. *Diaper*. The next Morning, when Mr. *Goodwill* came in to see me, he found me up, and sitting by the Fire-side: He expressed some Apprehension that I had got up too soon, and then congratulated my Recovery, in the most polite and good-natured Terms. I returned my Thanks for the various Instances I had experienced of his Goodness; and was so much affected with the Subject, that I thought I could never acknowledge them enough. He told me not to think myself under any Obligation, for that he had done no more than he thought he was obliged to perform to his Fellow-creature, under such Circumstances, as a Man and a Christian; and that he reaped the more Pleasure in having been the Means of saving my Life, from the Consideration that I had conferred formerly some Favours upon his Wife, which, added he, I shall ever retain a very grateful Sense of. I was confused at what he said, not being able to recollect I had ever seen her; which Doubt I imparted to him, and told him, tho' I had reaped the Benefit and Honour of his Friendship, by a Deception which had operated so much in my Favour, I could not dispense with myself, for my Want of Sincerity, if I did not undeceive him, by assuring him I had never had the Happiness even to see his good Lady. He smiled at this, and told me he did not doubt but I should know

her at her first Sight, and that, the next Morning, he'd do himself the Satisfaction to introduce her to Breakfast, an Opportunity she had languished for ; but was fearful, before, of the Surprise doing me Hurt.

---

## C H A P. XXVIII.

*He advertises his Friend, where to find him.—  
 Receives a Visit from Madam Goodwill.  
 —His Amazement at the Sight of her.—  
 Who she proves to be.—She relates her Ad-  
 ventures.*

AS soon as Mr. Goodwill had left me, I wrote a Letter to my Friend Mr. Diaper, acquainting him that I was at *Mount Christian*, with the Occasion of my being there, and every Thing that had happened to me, since my precipitate Departure from my Father's ; which I endeavoured to excuse to him, and begged, that, without letting our Family know my Situation, he would immediately do me the Pleasure to visit me, that I might return in his Company ; at the same Time begging him to put poor *Fidèle*, who had, till now, been entirely out of my Thoughts, under the Protection of my Mother, till my Return. This Letter I immediately sent by a Domestic, whom  
 Mr.

Mr. *Goodwill* had been so obliging to furnish me with for that Purpose.

I must own I waited with some Impatience for the Sight of Mrs. *Goodwill*: There was somewhat so mysterious, I thought, in her Knowledge of me, that it very much raised my Expectations of the Event: I immediately imagined the Lady, whose Voice and Manner I had taken such particular Notice of at my being brought in, must be that Gentlewoman; and the Tone of her Voice, being what I thought I was no Stranger to, still involved me in more and more Perplexity: At length the Time arrived, and Mr. *Goodwill* entered with his Spouse, whom I no sooner got up to salute, than I was seized with the utmost Admiration and Astonishment, discovering in her Features the well known Lines of the amiable and unfortunate Mrs. *Modish*: Her present Situation, and the Discourse I had had with Mr. *Goodwill*, the Morning before, together with the Recollection of what had passed between us some Years ago, joined to make my Ideas a jumbled Chaos of odd and unconnected Thoughts. She perceived my Confusion, and obliging me to sit down, told me she did not wonder at my Surprise to see a Woman so altered in her Circumstances, and in so happy a Station, the preceding Part of whose Life had been attended with so much Misery. I was equally struck, continues she, to behold a Gentleman, I shall ever esteem

esteem and value, brought to my House, in so cruel a Condition, which gave me great and uncommon Uneasiness and Concern. If Mr. Goodwill, who is well acquainted with my History, will permit me, and you have Strength enough to bear the Recital, I will soon inform you how good Providence has been to me, and how surprisingly I am become, from the most Wretched, the most happy Woman breathing; and still more so, as it has afforded the late Opportunity to shew my Regard for Mr. Thompson. I returned my Thanks for her Favours in the most feeling Manner, and signified my Desire to hear her Adventures; which, Mr. Goodwill being otherwise engaged, and withdrawing, after begging Pardon for his abrupt Departure, she recited accordingly, in the following Manner:

*The Adventures of Mrs. GOODWILL.*

YOU may remember, Sir, the Distress I was in upon being met by my Brother-in-Law, as I was returning from a Country Walk with you, and that afterwards I sent you a mournful Letter, which was dictated by my Concern, as well for you, as myself; for Mr. Modish was full of Rage, that I would not discover who you was, and where you lived, vowing the utmost Revenge for the Wrongs he supposed you had done him; but I was Proof against all his Menaces, which made him carry his brutal Treatment to a Length of Outrage,

Outrage, the very Remembrance of which makes me tremble; and, about Half an Hour after, at the utmost Hazard, I had sent the Letter to you, I was hurried into a Coach with himself and his Brother, and a Box in which were my Cloaths and Linnen; and a Coachman, according to his Instructions, drove at a great Rate, till we came to a Village, about seven Miles from Town, where we alighted, at the Gate of a very large House, which upon entering, I immediately discovered to be a private Mad-house, and you'll easily imagine my Melancholy and Despair, when I over-heard them give Instructions to the Gentlewoman who kept it, to hold me closely confined; and, if it was found needful, to chain me, shave my Head, or otherwise treat me, as the Nature of my Disorder should require; and then, with an angry Menace, that he would now wreck his utmost Vengeance upon me, they went away, leaving me in a Condition that may be more easily imagined than described. The Gentlewoman then approached me with an Air of the utmost Humanity, and bid me be comforted, telling me she already knew the Nature of my Case, and heartily pitied my unfortunate Condition; adding, that she knew too much of the furly Disposition of her own Husband, and the Ills she suffered from it, not to attempt every Way to make my Captivity as easy as possible, merely from sympathising in my Distress: In short, I found



found the good Woman to be a Person of so kind a Disposition, and humane Behaviour, that I began to think myself more happy than I could have expected. Her Husband, indeed, was a brutal Tyrant, that, having been used to domineer over and chastise the unfortunate Creatures that were put into his Hands, practised no Decorum towards me, or any one else; and, upon any little Pretence, would lock me into my Apartment, and swear I was absolutely mad, and should be treated accordingly. To get rid, in some Degree, of his Abuses, I was advised by his Wife, who heartily befriended me, to be as serviceable as I could to them in their Domestic Affairs; and the Scheme took so well, that I was even trusted with the Keys, and made the Gaoler of my Fellow-prisoners. To tell you how many exorbitant Crimes I took Notice of, in the Time I continued here, would make your Hair stand erect upon your Head: Wives have been received, as mad, from their Husbands, who were tired of them; Parents from their Children; Children from their Parents; and used in so brutal a Way, as often really to produce that Disorder, or others that have proved more fatal to them. The Keepers of those Houses are generally the lowest and most hardened Wretches to any Sense of Pity or Regard for Mankind, and use the Power given to them with a Wantonness that is terrible to think of; all the Schemes possible are put in Execution.

Execution to get Money, and the People in a common Work-house may be said to enjoy better Provisions than those whose Friends really pay large Sums for their Support and Maintenance. My good Comforter and Adviser, who was used little better herself, frequently lamented her abject Fate, and the Necessity she was under to countenance such Proceedings, which panged her to the very Heart. I think, amongst a great Number of reputed Lunatics, in the Compass of one Year and an Half, I observed ten or a dozen who were as much in their Senses as I was myself, and were only trepanned into the House, to gratify the base Designs, or satiate the Revenge and Cruelty of their Relations. My Husband, who allowed them forty Pounds a Year for my Detention and Board, never came near me more; and I understood, in about two Years, that he had died without making any Provision for my future Support; so that, consequently, I was at Liberty to go where I would. I was now in great Distress, where to apply for Relief; the Law, with the small Remainder of my Friends, seemed too tedious a Method to recover some Part of my Fortune from his Relations, to whom he had left every Shilling he was worth: My Father was dead; and my Brother, the only Survivor, besides myself, of the Family, I knew was too penurious and avaricious to assist me. I once thought of sending Word to you of my  
forlorn

forlorn Condition ; but a Train of Reflections upon the former Actions I had been guilty of, and which I really had long regretted, and resolved to forsake ; Actions I should never have been guilty of, had my good Fortune cast me into more worthy, kind, and indulgent Hands, than those of Mr. *Modish* ; and the Injury I might thereby continue to do to a young Gentleman, whose Temper seemed to destine him to a happier Fate, than to possess the Heart of so unfortunate a Woman, determined me against it. Yes, Mr. *Thompson*, tho' I ever loved you since I knew you, yet I was resolved never to indulge my Passion in the disorderly and criminal Manner I before had done, and therefore forbore to let you know in what Way Fortune had disposed of me. At last I closed with a Proposal made me by kind Mrs. *Ludlam*, and stooped so low, as to accept Wages of her Husband, to assist her in her Household Concerns, and the Superintendency, at Times, of the Lunatics under his Care. I exercised this Post, hoping, that, as the Almighty had thought proper and fit thus to humble me in this Life, he would graciously accept my sincere Amendment and Sorrow for my past Offences, and mercifully receive me into his Favour, when it should please him to demand my wretched Being into his Hands, who lent it to me. Such serious Reflections, and a View of the many Miseries human Nature is subject to, Instances of which

which I had daily before my Eyes, together with the Conversation of my amiable Mistress, dissipated all my Anguish of Heart; and I enjoyed a Calm in this low Situation, that I thought nothing could ever have Power to disturb; and which I wished no Alteration in, when Providence, doubtless to reward my Resignation to its Will, and to put it into my Power, by Acts of Goodness, to manifest my sincere Repentance in a Condition more suitable to my former Sphere, sent a Gentleman, one Day, into our House as a Patient, whom it had reserved to make me completely happy. A Coach stopped at the Gate, attended by a Number of Domesticks in rich Liveries, and a Gentleman alighted from it of a fine Aspect and Presence, which seemed altered by a profound Melancholy, and a Kind of Stupidity in his Countenance, which one might plainly perceive was far from being natural; and indicated his Distemper too strongly, to leave any Doubt of the Loss of his Reason. He was led in by two others, of the same Age, nearly, with himself, and, after he was introduced into the Parlour, they left him to give proper Instructions to my Master, and were longer in Conference than ordinary, talking with seemingly great Vehemence and Force; and I thought I heard one of them tell my Master, "That, if he performed their Orders strictly, he should, over and above what was agreed on, receive a farther Reward of an

an hundred Pounds ;” to which he made a very profound Obedience. I don’t know how, but methought this Gentleman at first Sight interested me in his Fate ; I commiserated his Depravity of Mind, and wished he had been happier : I found in myself an Inclination to attend upon him, long before his Conductors, each of them, put a Guinea into my Hand, desiring I would add my Care to my Master and Mistress’s, that their Friend should be kept close, and no one suffered to see him, without he came in Company with one of them. I could not help thinking there was somewhat extraordinary in this Method and Manner of proceeding, and if the Gentleman had not shewn all the Signs of Frenzy in his Eyes, and stupid Deportment ; I should have imagined he had been brought there, rather as a Sacrifice to some bad Design than for a Remedy against his Disorder. When they left us, my Master ordered me to see that a certain Room was prepared for him, which was the worst in the House ; at which when I admired, he bid me not be impertinent, but obey his Orders. Accordingly Things were made ready, and he was locked in, and, tho’ in no Degree outrageous, had the *strait Waistcoat* clapped upon him, which he was so far from opposing, that he yielded to every Transaction with the Passiveness of an Infant. Mr. *Ludlam* then gave me Orders to attend him, and bid me not mention him to Dr. *Hellebore* (the Physician

Physician attending our House) as the Gentlemen had left what Physic was necessary for him, which I was to give him every other Morning. Nothing of this, so contrary to our common Methods, but still more and more increased my Surprise: However, it was not my Business to dispute, tho' when my Mistress understood from me my Instructions, she could not help saying, with a Shake of the Head, that she was fearful it was never intended he should go alive out of the House. None of our Keepers, either Men or Women, were suffered to go near him but myself, so great was the Confidence our Governor reposed in me; and, the first Time I went in to him, I found him in a fixed Posture, weeping like a young Child; and, if I asked him any Question, he answered with the same Simplicity and Inattention, which a young Child would have done. He was suffered to eat no Meat, and his Fare was only Water-gruel, Bread and Cheese, and Butter, which he never took with the least Appetite, and generally left three Parts of his Day's Allowance for me to carry away again. Thus he continued, with his Arms constantly confined in the Day-time, for near a Month, in which I duly attended him, and every other Day infused a Powder in his Water-gruel, which my Master gave me for that Purpose. He was almost always dozing, and fell away till he was so meagre, that his Bones appeared thro' his Skin,

and

and he looked like the Picture of Death. I frequently carried him privately Provisions from our Table, which he would eat very greedily, and shew'd a much greater Relish for than the Food appointed him. Things were in this Situation, when my Master was obliged to go as far as *Cambridge* for a Week to receive another Patient, and both of us totally forgot to mention his leaving the Powder, which he delivered only Day by Day, which I neither knew by Name nor had seen before, tho' it seem'd to be a Composition of several Kinds of Drugs and Minerals. This occasion'd an Omission of three Days in the Administration of his Physic, for it was so long before Mr. *Ludlam* discover'd that he had been gully of such an Oversight; which he no sooner did, but, leaving his Business imperfect, he return'd in great Haste to rectify his Neglect; but it was too late, for, the Morning of the second Day after his Departure, our Patient began to rave and talk in a very extraordinary Manner, and would frequently curse his Brother, and several others by Name, who had been the Source of so many Misfortunes, as he mention'd, to him; yet in his utmost Anger he behav'd mildly to me, and, in the Evening of that Day, told me, in as sober a Way as I ever heard any Thing told, that he had been abused, and that his Brother and some other Persons, eager to possess his Estate, and to hinder him of a Match with some suitable Person or other, which  
they

they apprehended would baulk their Design, had taken the Advantage of a Debauch, and mingled a soporific and stupifying Powder with his Liquor, by which they had reduced him to the State he supposed I first saw him in, and which he did not doubt had been continued by frequent Repetitions of the same benumbing and dreadful Composition. He begged me, for God's Sake, to hear his Story; which I did, and indeed thought it a very melancholy one: He had been at one Mad-house already by the same Means, and perceived that they had trepanned him thus again, with a settled Intention to take away his Life: Adding, that he did not desire me to believe him till, by hearing the same Story over and over from him, without a material Omission or Variation, and from his temperate Behaviour, I was convinced he was not distracted, and that at this Time he only enjoyed a lucid Interval. He was sensible, he said, that the same Stuff had been given him, since he had been under our Care, but hoped I was not privy to any of this Villainy; that he entertained great Hopes from the good-natured Cast of my Mind, that, when I was convinced of the Truth of this Relation, and who he was, which he would put me into a Way of learning, I would use my good Offices to procure his Liberty; and that, as a Recompence for that important Service, he would vow in the most solemn Manner to make me the Mistress of himself and



and Fortune, the Minute he had settled his Affairs : I am now alive again, I suppose by some Mistake in the Execution of their Project; and I conjure you, if you know, to tell me, how you give me that cursed Inflaver of my Senses, and that you would omit it for the future, and shew it to me. As a Proof that I am perfect in my Understanding, I will still counterfeit the Stupidity I was subject to, that, for I perceive you are an Assistant here, your Rogue of a Master may not suspect the Alteration that has happily betided. How impossible is it for you to guess the Amazement that seized me upon hearing him? I at first doubted the Reality of what I heard, and thought it only some sudden Turn of his Disorder; but when I recollected every Thing I have before related, and compared it with what he had just told me, I could no longer doubt the Villainy that had been practised upon the poor Gentleman: I therefore assured him of my Services, upon his giving me the same Proof of his Sanity on the Morrow, by persisting in the same Story; that, as to his Name and Family, I had heard it from my Master, telling him, that I found he was a *Yorkshire* Gentleman, of a good Estate, whose Name was *Goodwill*; and that what astonished me most was the Information I had received from the same Hands, that, after a proper Trial, a Commission of Lunacy had been awarded against him by the Lord *Chancellor*. He said, that  
was

was, he believed, too true; but the Acts of Lunacy had been proved upon him, at a Time when the aforesaid Potions had rendered him for some Time incapable of managing his Affairs, and returning proper Answers to the Questions that were asked him; that he had Friends, who, if he had an Opportunity to see them, would help him in his Application to his Lordship for a Revival of his Case, and which could be no otherwise effected than by my affording him my Assistance to make his Escape to *London*. His Behaviour the next Day so thoroughly convinced me that he had been imposed upon, that I told him I was resolved to assist his Escape, that very Evening. His Acknowledgments were couched in Terms of the most extreme Gratitude, and, my Confidence in him having given him the Use of his Arms, he pressed me between them, and protested that he would not, he could not, enjoy the Fortune I was returning into his Hands, unless I would promise to share it with him. In short, Mr. *Thompson*, his Person, his Manner, and a secret Inclination my Heart could not help, confessing towards so much Merit and good Sense as he seemed to be Master of, dictated a Reply suitable to his Wishes; and, when I had told him my own Story, he said, he could not help observing, that Providence had undoubtedly appointed, by our thus meeting, a Period to each of our Misfortunes. It was but an Hour before Mr. *Ludlam's* Arrival, that I privately

opened a Way for him thro' the Back-door of our House, and that of the Garden, whence, after a tender Embrace, I saw him, swift, as his Condition and ill Habit of Body would permit, set off for *London*, over the neighbouring Fields, after I had assisted him in tearing the Sheets of his Bed, and wrenching the Bars of the Window to which he tied them, to make it appear, that he had made his Escape without any Assistance. Mr. *Ludlam* returned in the utmost Pain for his Forgetfulness, and was very ready to charge me with Part of the Fault; but when, upon going up Stairs, he perceived what had happened, he cursed and swore, like a Madman, and, but for the Expedition he thought himself obliged to use in the Pursuit of Mr. *Goodwill*, would, I believe have done me some Mischief in his Passion. He returned however jaded and fatigued the next Morning, not being able, to my great Joy, to overtake or discover the Run-away; and immediately dispatched an Express to the Brother in *Yorkshire*, with an Account of his Misfortune, and the next Day put an Advertisement in the Papers, describing Mr. *Goodwill's* Person, and promising a Reward to whoever should bring him back. For some Days after this, in which his Revenge was directed against me, to whom, in spite of all the Remonstrances of his Wife, he had given Warning, and resolved that I should stay there no longer, for my Neglect, as he called it,

we

we heard nothing of Mr. *Goodwill*; but one Evening a Coach and Six stopped, and to my transported View was presented that Gentleman himself with another, alighting and entering thro' the Gate. I flew to open the Inner-door, and, the Minute he entered, he clasped me fondly in his Arms, and told his Companion, in me, he might behold his Guardian Angel and Preserver, to whom he owed his Life and Fortune: Adding, I came my dear Creature, with the utmost Expedition, to make you a Sharer in my Happiness: My Lord *Chancellor*, convinced by my Appearance, and the Testimony of this good and worthy Gentleman, and some other Friends, how much he had been imposed upon, and how ill I have been treated, has recalled his Commission, and re-instated me in the Possession of what I had been so villainously deprived of; and I have Yesterday directed a Prosecution to be commenced against the Parties, who have injured me so grossly, whom I don't fear of bringing to condign Punishment: I recollected the Obligations you said you were under to Mrs. *Ludlam*, and on that Account have declined any Proceedings against the Villain, her Husband, on Condition he becomes a Witness against my Brother, and the other Conspirators. Mr. *Ludlam*, who had just come to the Door, and perceived how Matters had been carried, and heard these last Words, fell upon his Knees, and confessed the

Share he had had in this State of Roguery, and that he had undertaken to give him such Things as were sent for that Purpose, and very bad Usage, to deprive him, as soon as possible, of his Life. Some things he added, that had passed between the Brother and him, which made the two Gentlemen lift up their Eyes in the utmost Astonishment at his unparalleled Wickedness. They gave him proper Advice upon the Occasion, and he was so affected with what was said, that he promised a sincere Reformation of his Life, and protested a Detestation of the many Crimes of this Sort he had been guilty of. Mr. *Goodwill*, after bestowing a handsome Present upon my good Mistress, of whom I took a most tender Adieu, carried me with him to *London*, where the Morning after our Arrival, he married me, and I have ever since, with that most excellent of Men, enjoyed a Life of perfect Bliss and Satisfaction. We have been at this Seat about three Months, and understand that the Conspirators, fearful of abiding the Issue of the Law, before they could be secured, have fled over into *France*, where my Spouse thinks to leave them to the Remorse of their own Consciences, without carrying his just Resentment further against them; nay, has even privately remitted some Monies for the Use of his wretched Brother, so merciful and forgiving is his Disposition. Mr. *Ludlam* is altered for the better, and  
behaves

behaves with more Decorum to his good Wife, with whom I even now take a Pleasure to correspond. And thus, Mr. *Thompson*, I have recited this surprising Series of Events. My Husband knows nothing of our former Familiarities, which is the only Circumstance I ever hid from his Knowledge; and your Prudence will direct your Behaviour so properly, as neither to give him or myself any Uneasiness. I dare answer for it your Principles are not altered, that you possess the same Veneration for Virtue I knew you once did, and which I am sorry we ever offended; which, more than any Thing, will ever engage me to beg a Share of your Friendship, and to endeavour, on all Occasions, to shew you how much I think myself obliged to promote your Interest and Welfare both by my own good Offices, and those of my Spouse. I shall be glad to know by what Accident you came into the cruel Condition my Husband found you in, and whether you still pursue the Profession I left you engaged in.

## C H A P. XXIX.

*He satisfies Mrs. Goodwill's Inquiries.—She engages to take Fidele into her Service.—Mr. Diaper arrives, with whom he returns to his Father's.—Receives a Letter from Louisa.—His Friend and he set out for London.—They arrive at Mr. Bellair's.*

THUS this worthy Woman concluded her Narration, which gave me infinite Pleasure : I was grieved at the Hardships she had gone thro', and sincerely congratulated her on her present Happiness, which indeed seemed without the least Alloy to adulterate it. We both took Occasion to admire the Ways of Providence, *puzzled in Mazes, and perplexed with Errors*; nor could I forbear repeating the following Lines of the same excellent Poet upon the Occasion :

*Our Understanding traces them in vain,  
Lost and bewilder'd in the fruitless Search;  
Nor sees with how much Art the Windings run,  
Nor where the regular Confusion ends.*

I began to be more resigned to the Dispensations of Heaven, perceiving by this Recital, which illustrated many former Observations, that our Designs and Counsels are far from being able to produce

duce the Effects we desire, unless Providence at the same Time superintends and approves our Plans of Action ; and that we should never repine at the little Accidents or Rubs we meet with in Pursuit of our Wishes, seeing they may in the End be productive of the very Things we think them most retrograde and contrary to.

I thanked her for her Professions of Regard to me, with Warmth and Fervor, and related my former Adventures, in as brief a Manner as possible, to her, enlarging upon what had lately happened, and my Affection for the charming *Louisa*. She condoled with me upon the Crosses that had befallen us in our Loves ; but, at the same Time, comforted me, by representing how much I ought to be satisfied in the Prudence and Constancy of that Lady, and her Promises of being no other's than mine ; that all the Sallies of Rage and Passion, I had been guilty of, had been an Injury to the Opinion I ought to entertain of her, and, instead of furthering my Wishes, had involved me in the greatest Danger and Distresses. I was convinced of the Truth of what this excellent Woman said, and resolved for the future to act with more Caution and Regard to my *Louisa's* Instructions. She then took Notice of what I had related of the Grief of *Fidele* at her being separated from her Mistress, and obligingly told me, that she would take her under her Care, if I would permit her, till her Lady was in a



Capacity to receive her again into her Service. , I was charmed with this Offer, as I was under a little Dilemma, as to the Manner I should dispose of that faithful Girl, whom my lovely Maid had so strongly recommended to my Protection, knowing that my Father would be too delicate in an Affair of this Nature, to let her continue about my Mother, who otherwise I was sure would have been proud of the Opportunity of keeping *Fidèle* with her. Mr. *Goodwill*, by this Time, returned, and the Conversation became general; amongst other Matters, he said, he was glad to understand I was his Countryman; that he recollected to have seen my Father, whom he wished for an Opportunity to revive his Acquaintance with, and hoped, wherever I settled for the future Part of my Life, I would join with him and Mrs. *Goodwill*, in maintaining a Friendship and Correspondence with each other. I was too much honoured by such a Proposal to hear it without the utmost Returns of Thankfulness I could make, by owning my Sense of so kind and to me interesting a Proposal; for Mr. *Goodwill*, without Dispute, was a Gentleman of a very large Estate, and as considerable in his Interest, as most in the County. I discovered in this and other Conversations I had with him, that he was a Man of great Sense, nice Discernment, and had acquired a Knowledge of Letters, that almost induced me to think he had spent the  
greatest

greatest Part of his Life in a College. As I grew still better and better, they took me with them in the Chariot, and now and then on Horseback, and endeavoured, by all the Amusements they could invent, to chace away my Melancholy, and inspire me with my wonted Health. In about a Day and an Half, my dear Friend, who set out with the Messenger, the Minute he received my Account where I was, arrived, and his Presence seemed to cast a new Satisfaction over my Mind, that soon helped me to overcome my remaining Weakness. Our Meeting was very tender and affectionate, and he expressed his Grief at seeing so visible an Alteration in my Countenance ; but, when he heard from me every minute Circumstance of the Cruelties that *'Squire Rich* had acted upon me, he was all Distraction, and it was with Difficulty I could restrain him from going immediately in Search of the Villain, to bring him to immediate Punishment for his repeated Crimes. He was received by my Friends, with great Distinction and Respect, they having understood by me his Worth and the mutual Friendship that subsisted between us, and they spared no Device to make our Abode agreeable and entertaining to us. I gave him a succinct Account of the Adventures of this happy Pair, which gave him prodigious Pleasure, and opened a Field for many excellent Observations, by all which he essayed to convince me of the Unreason-

ableness and Folly of my late Behaviour. I was curious to know how my Father and Mother took my sudden Disappearing, upon which he informed me, that they were both under a Consternation that is inexpressible, when they understood the Motives and Manner of my setting out, which *Fidèle* was able to give them an Idea of; as to his Part, he said, he had rode in Search after me every Way, and had employed two or three Days in vain and teasing Efforts to find me; but that nothing could equal the Dread and Apprehensions of their foreboding Souls, when my Horse, which had been stopped by a neighbouring Farmer, who had seen me ride him, was brought Home without his Rider. My Mother fainted, and *Fidèle* wrung her Hands in the utmost Agony; my Father, to whom at that Time my Friend was disclosing my Amour, which he thought it now necessary to do, was struck with Fear at what might have happened to me, and dispatched Messengers every Way, but to no Purpose, to discover where I was, or what Accident might have befallen me; and every one was inconsolable in the Family till my Letter arrived, which, notwithstanding my Injunctions, he thought proper to communicate to my Father and Mother, which raised their drooping Hearts. He further informed me, that Sir *Walter* had not returned to his Seat, since he went from it, which was the Day of my own Departure; that

that my Father was quite grieved at my Imprudence in involving myself in a Passion for Miss *Louisa* before I was settled in the World ; but more particularly blamed me, for my Rashness, and Want of Temper, in the Pursuit of it : However, he believed, he said, that he was secretly inclined to favour my Pretensions, as well from Affection to me, as his Veneration for the lovely and deserving Object of my Flame, whose great Merit and Beauty, he could not help privately owning, was a sufficient Inducement for my acting as I had done.

Two Days after my Friend's Arrival, being now able to take the Journey, we took Leave of Mr. *Goodwill* and his Lady, not without loading them with sincere and hearty Acknowledgments for the Favours and Kindnesses we had received, and making Protections, on all Sides, to continue our Friendship and Acquaintance, accompanied on our Parts, with repeated Promises of waiting upon them again in the Country, or as soon as they arrived at their House in *London*. In the Evening we alighted at my Father's, and the Sight of that Neighbourhood well nigh plunged me into my former Melancholy, and drew a profound Sigh from the Bottom of my Heart. My Mother received me like one risen from the Dead ; and poor *Fidele*, who had staid with her ever since, was in Extasies at seeing me again. My Father received

me also with great Affection, but mingled his Expressions of Joy for my safe Arrival, with Animadversions upon my Folly, in suffering myself to be driven to such headstrong Actions by my Passion, which, however, he generously said he had not the Power to condemn, but only let me know that he thought I ought at least to have been freed from the Obligation I was under to my Master, before I had suffered Love to make such an Alteration in me; concluding with Rules for the future Government of my Transports, and Injunctions to wait the happy Moment, which he said might probably arrive, when Sir *Walter* might be induced, by his Daughter's Sollicitations, and a View of my increasing Worth and Merit, to return to his former Esteem of me, and consent to make me his Son-in-Law. I kissed his Hand at this flattering Conclusion, which seemed to revive my Expectations of Happiness, and resolved, as near as possible, to conform myself to the Rules he had laid down. *Fidele* and my Mother both approved of her going to stay with Mrs. *Goodwill*, where, accordingly, she went, carrying a Letter of Compliments from me, and another of Thanks from my Father, for their Goodness to me, after I had made her a handsome Present in Money, and promised her she should never be at a Loss for a Friend, till I could restore her to my *Louisa*. She had not been gone above two Hours, when a Man, in Sir *Walter's* Livery,

Livery, delivered me a Letter, which I immediately discovered, to my equal Amazement and Joy, was the Writing of my charming *Louisa*. Finding, by it, I was not to return an Answer, I rewarded the Servant for his Fidelity to his young Lady, in the most generous Manner, and ventured to ask him if he knew where the 'Squire was gone; and he informed me he was at a neighbouring Seat to that where my *Louisa* resided, where he still lived with Sir *Walter*, without making any Progress with his Cousin. I was concerned the Distance gave me no Liberty to chastise this Scoundrel; but it was impossible, and I pleased myself with the Thoughts of some future Opportunity of gratifying my just and equitable Resentment. Never was Mortal so inspired as I was by the Receipt of this reviving Letter, which I kissed and hugged to my Bosom, with enthusiastic Raptures! Oh! the melting Softness conveyed in every Line! the tender Fears! the earnest Wishes for our happy Return to each other! dissolved my very Soul away. She informed me of her Health, and that her Father, content with having removed her from me, allowed her more Liberty than she could have expected at her first Arrival; that she had engaged this Servant to bring me that Letter, to which she desired I would not think of returning an Answer, as it might occasion, by a Discovery, still more Unhappiness to her: She sweetly endeavoured to chase away any

Distrust

Distrust of her Truth and Constancy, which might dwell upon my Mind; and supposed, soon after I could receive this, I should be obliged to return to *London*, where she advised me to live as happily as possible, till some future good Fortune should put it in our Power to satisfy the Motions of our Hearts. Such a pleasing Satisfaction and Calm succeeded the Receipt of these welcome, unexpected Lines, that could be equalled by nothing, but that Ease the Sight of my *Louisa* herself would have inspired, which gave my Father and Mother, and my Friend, a great deal of Joy; and now the Time of our Departure, according to my worthy Master's Instructions, was near expired, and Mr. *Diaper* was eager to visit his Miss *Bellair*, where, according to Promise, we were to spend a Week, which I could not refuse to this excellent Associate. Before we set out, we visited Mr. *Goodwill* and his Lady once more, Mr. *Archer*, and Mr. *Sharp-ley*, and took a Farewel of all our Friends, who regretted our Departure. A Thousand Times I visited, also, every Retreat about Sir *Walter's*, where I had been so blessed in my *Louisa*, and sighed her Name in every conscious Grove! I went to the poor Family she had once carried me to see, whom I found in Grief for the Loss of their Benefactress, whose Place, at present, I endeavoured to supply, by giving the good Woman a Sum of Money for her immediate Purposes, and promising

promising to see them at my Return into the Country. My Mother's Tendernefs gave her great Pain in this Separation; but, when Mr. *Diaper* and myself both assured her that we would obtain Leave to take another Tour, in four or five Months, she was, in some Measure, comforted. My Father was also moved at Parting with us; and, indeed, we were now so naturalised to the Country, that we could hardly bear the Thoughts of leaving it ourselves. Our Embraces and Adieus were sensibly touching, and we set out with my Father, Mr. *Archer*, and Mr. *Sharpley*, who would insist upon seeing us some Miles on our Way; but which only served to give us fresh Torment, in going thro' the same tender Scene once more.

Now left to ourselves, nothing but Love filled our Thoughts, and we rode a considerable Stage, without breaking the Silence our Contemplations occasioned. The Difference, indeed, between my Friend's Reflections and mine was great; he was, with eager Wishes, longing Expectations, in the Prospect of throwing himself at the Feet of his lovely *Bellair*, whilst I was deploring the immense Distance that still divided me from my *Louisa*, and the various Obstacles I had to surmount, before I could even promise myself the Happiness of seeing that adorable Creature. Thus differently were we employed, till we arrived at Mr. *Bellair's*, where we were received with more  
Rejoicing



Rejoicing and Civilities than can well be expressed.

---

### C H A P. XXX.

*A generous Proposal of Mr. Bellair's.—Mr. Diaper happy in the View of his future Bliss.—The tender Parting of the two Lovers.—They set out for London.—Arrive there.—Are most affectionately received by Mr. and Mrs. Diaper.*

THIS amiable and worthy Pair studied how they could testify their Pleasure at our long expected Visit; and Miss *Sukey*, whose Charms were more and more improved since I last saw her, contrived a thousand little Entertainments for her Lover, to fix him as long as possible with her. Our Conversations rolled upon the several Accidents we had met with in the Country; and Mr. *Diaper* having jocularly told Miss *Bellair* that I was as much a Captive to Love, since she saw me, as himself, it opened a Way for me to gratify these good and kind Friends with a Character of my *Louisa*, and a Detail of my past Misfortunes, and the Griefs that at this Time oppressed my Heart. After all you have said, cries Mr. *Bellair*, I don't see you have so much Occasion for Despair as you imagine:

imagine : Your principal Difficulty seems to lie, in gaining Sir *Walter's* Consent to your Happiness, which you imagine Want of Fortune will render an Impossibility. As to that, I believe I may soon promise you a Remedy, which I here vow I'll administer with the utmost Satisfaction. I expect, by the Death of an Uncle in *Leicestershire*, who is every Day likely to decease, an Increase to my Estate, already large enough for this Lady and myself, of 1100*l.* a Year. If I were to make this privately over to you for some Years, which I protest I shall find no Regret in doing, would you consent to make an Acknowledgment, by paying your Friend here 2000*l.* as an Increase of my Sister's Fortune, as soon as it comes into your Hands? The Term shall be twelve or fourteen Years, then to be resumed by me or my Heirs, paying a proper Consideration upon the Death of Sir *Walter*, for the Use of the Money arising from the Income of the said Estate, which also shall be applied to the Use of Mr. *Diaper* and my Sister, or their Children. What dost say, *Thompson*? added he, I love you so much, that you shall be welcome to the Possession of it, as soon as it falls ; and then I fancy, with that Stock of Merit, so much in Request, Sir *Walter* will give Ear to your Suit.

As I knew this Proposal was not merely dictated by Mirth, but would have been put in Practice, upon my desiring it, as soon as it was in Mr. *Bel-*  
*lair's*

*lair's* Power, I returned him Thanks with a Mixture of Seriousness and Jest; and told him I'd take as much Time to consider of it, as would pass between this and the Death of his Uncle.

We hunted, fished, and made frequent Parties of Pleasure, whilst we staid at this Gentleman's; and both himself and his Lady endeavoured to banish that settled, mournful Gloom, that constantly, notwithstanding all my Efforts to the contrary, was impressed upon my Countenance. As to Mr. *Diaper*, he was as happy as a Man can be, who enjoys the Company of the Object of his Love; and seemed now to have nothing to fear that could hinder his approaching Marriage, which he was to get his Father's Consent to, the Minute he arrived in Town, and where Mr. *Bellair* and his Family proposed to repair in a Month's Time at farthest. Miss *Suke*y was entirely pleased in her Choice; and upon his mentioning his Father's late Loss, which so much affected him, told him, an Increase or Decrease in his Fortune was never capable of making the least Impression, to his Prejudice, in her Bosom; that she did not doubt of being happy with him, and that Riches had no Share in the Affection she professed for him. Her Sentiments were agreeable, in that, to her Brother's and Sister's, who often told my Friend, that Half what he was likely to possess was enough to make two reasonable Beings happy.

The

The Time of our Departure came.—My Friend had perceived its Approach with Pain, and was now quite afflicted at the Thoughts of leaving his Mistress ; who, on her Side, also, was full of Anxiety and Uneasiness, which she could not conceal. I have thought since, that Providence permits us to receive some foreboding Hints of the Ills that are likely to be our Portion. I have often, before some sinister Event, found a Heaviness and Dulness, a Grief dwelling with me, that I could not account for, just before the Blow has fallen upon my Head. All the fair Prospects these tender Lovers had of their Felicity, which seemed so near in its Approach, could not console them for this Separation, and Sighs and Tears involuntarily flowed ! Alas ! too sure a Presage of the gathering Storms, that were threatening to discharge their Force upon them !

Mr. *Bellair* and his Spouse, by their Discomposure in parting with us, convinced us how dear we were to them ; and I could not help feeling a certain, unspeakable Regret when I took my Leave. We sat out, and, nothing particular happening the Remainder of our Journey, we arrived in *London*, in perfect Health of Body, but with other Minds than we had carried thence, after an Absence of seven Months, and a few Days.

When we came Home, the Servants hardly knew us, our Faces were so tanned ; nay, honest *Prig*,  
who

who happened to be there at our Entrance, swore we had made a Voyage into the *South Seas*, and had brought home the dusky Hue of the *Spanish Indies*. My Master and Mistress received us with the utmost Affection, and endeavoured every Way to shew how much they were pleased in our punctual Compliance with our Orders to return. We visited our Acquaintance, and began to resume our several Departments in Business, which, from so long a Disuse, appeared at first very awkward to us.

---

## C H A P. XXXI.

*He grows melancholy.—His Master suffers another great Loss.—His Friend's Distress thereon.—Letter to him from Miss Susanna Bellair.—Mr. Diaper writes to Mr. Thompson on Account of his Son's Condition.—His Father writes him a Letter which increases his Disorder.—Mr. Diaper fails.—Behaviour of that worthy Man upon the unfortunate Occasion.—He gives Thompson his Indentures, accompanied with proper Advice.*

MY Master, soon after our Arrival, set out for *Bristol*, to inspect into the Affairs of *Mr. Traffic*, where he stayed near a Fortnight; but

but found Things so bad, that himself, and the rest of the Creditors, were obliged to accept of five Shillings in the Pound for their Demands; which, as that Gentleman made it appear to their Satisfaction, that his Misfortunes flowed from no personal bad Conduct, but from unavoidable Losses in Trade, they made no Difficulty of, and suffered him to enter into Business again; my Master, in the most generous Manner imaginable, giving him fresh Credit.

My Mind so dwelt, ever since my Return from the Country, upon my charming *Louisa*, and represented the Difficulties I had to encounter to procure the Enjoyment of that lovely Maid, and the Distance she was at from me, with the Possibility of her being induced, by Absence and Threats, to forsake me, -in such gloomy and torturing Lights, that I fell into so black and profound a Melancholy, as alarmed the whole Family for my Safety: In vain were all the Reasons of my Friends; vain were the various Avocations Business provided, or the several Amusements the Goodness of Mr. *Diaper* suffered us to partake of: Nothing could remove my Fixedness of Thought from Objects of so terrifying a Cast, on which I was brooding perpetually, with an Intenseness that shattered my Brain. I forgot to correspond with my Friends, and hardly ever wrote to any but my Mother, whom I pestered with Inquiries of *Louisa*, from  
Time

Time to Time, which she was utterly incapable to answer; and were, some of them, so absurd and ridiculous, that the excellent Woman wrote me often Word, she was fearful my Head was disordered, and gave me very proper Advice to moderate my Grief and Disturbance, which she so plainly perceived, but which I was now incapable of attending to. Life hung upon me, and became a Burden; I had entertained a Notion that it was impossible I should ever be happy: *Hope*, with all its encouraging Train of smiling Promises, had forsaken my Breast, and the cursed Fiend *Despair* tyrannically ruled there, with despotic Sway: Tears, involuntarily, would frequently trickle from my Eyes, and whole Hours I used to sit moping in my Apartment, and quite stupid with the Indulgence I gave to my Sorrows. My Health declined apace, and I became a mere Shadow of my former Self, to the great Concern of my Master and Mistress, and the grievous Affliction of my dear Friend, who was reduced almost to the same State by his Sensibility of what I suffered: Alas! as great Torments were in Store for the generous Youth; he, too, was destined to undergo his Share of Pain; and a Blow our Affairs received, about this Time, roused me from my Inattention to what passed in the World, and made my Consolations as necessary to him, as his had been to me. Of three Vessels, the Cargoes of which were

Mr.

Mr. *Diaper's*, we every Day expected to arrive from the *Streights*, with rich Returns of Merchandize, two of them were taken by *Sallee-Rovers*, and carried into that Den of Pyrates, where they were confiscated by those rapacious Barbarians. This was such a Loss, as obliged us immediately to stop our Payments, in such a Manner, that our Credit suffered greatly; and it well nigh obliged Mr. *Diaper* to shut up his Shop. He bore it himself like a Christian and a Philosopher; he could accuse himself of nothing that could impeach his Character, and it was an Accident, that all the Foresight in the World could not have guarded against: The Ships were not insured, and therefore there was no Remedy for the Disaster, and he was forced patiently to sit down with the total Loss of near 20,000*l*. My Friend, however, would receive no Comfort; it was the Death to all those flattering, delusive Hopes he had entertained of his uninterrupted Happiness with his dear *Bell'air*. His Father had given his Consent to the Match, had, as a Prelude to it, taken him into Partnership with him, and he was to have set out in a Month to make that Beauty his own. He himself had as contemptible an Opinion of Wealth as it deserves; but his Ambition centered solely in making her rich and happy, and extending the agreeable Views of Independency and Fortune to their future Offspring. No Wonder if the Abortion of all these



Schemes, and the Loss of so engaging Prospects, should give him the severest Tortures! I, on my Side, could not but reflect that the Misfortune was also greatly mine; all my Hopes now of being taken into the Partnership, which my worthy Master, as well as his Son, had promised me I should, were in a Manner extinct, and I despaired; more than ever, of possessing my *Louisa*. Fortune seemed to obstruct me in all my Views and Designs; but I bore up under it, with more Constancy than I could ever flatter myself I should be able to do; and applied myself, by all the Means in my Power, to comfort my young Master; but he was inconsolable, and, in the first Agonies of his Soul, wrote Word to Miss *Sukey* of the bitter Loss, in Terms of mingled Love and Despair. I can't help giving the World the remarkable Answer he received from that Lady, which in some Measure, when every Thing else failed, restored him to some Relish for Life.

DEAR SIR,

I Received your melancholy Letter, with a sincere Grief and Sensibility of your late Misfortunes; but don't mistake me, it was not occasioned at all by my being likely to suffer by the Blow; far from it, my Love for Mr. *Diaper* was built upon other Foundations than the Hopes of Riches, or the Blandishments of Fortune: Your  
personal

personal Merit, Sir, your Worth, your Virtue and good Sense, were the Inducements to give you my Heart, and no Accident of this Kind can ever deprive you of it. A little, Sir, a very little Portion of Wealth is sufficient to make a Pair of reasonable Creatures happy; or, we'll suppose you stripped of the common Needs of Life, yet I can be pleased and happy, whilst I am sensible your Mind is the same. If we must defer our Union longer on this Account, let us bear it with becoming Patience, and depend upon it nothing shall ever alter my Sentiments towards you, or alienate my Affection from you, which is too pure to suffer Decay. My Fortune you are acquainted with already, and I hope you will think it somewhat more than a Compliment, when, with my Brother's Leave, I desire you would take it, even just now, into your Hands, if any Application of it can be of Service to you: I will make you my Steward and Guardian, but only take Notice of this, that you will be obliged to provide somehow for the Owner, if it should not thrive in your Hands, but follow the Fortune of what you have already lost. Dear Sir, let me desire you to exercise the same Resignation to the Will of Providence that I do, and cheerfully bear up under Ills that cannot now be cured, but may in Time be overcome. Adieu for the present, and be assured,

that Mr. *Diaper* is ever in the Mind and Thoughts of his affectionate

SUSANNA BELLAIR.

Disinterested Creature! generous Maid, may thy Excellencies prove a Pattern to thy Sex, and atone for the Faults of a Thousand less worthy fair Ones! curst be the Pen that prophanes the glorious, the resplendent Kind, with malicious Slander or invenomed Satire! may that Writer, who arraigns them all without Distinction, never be revived by their chearing Graces! may their delicate Softness of Soul, and innate Generosity, never sooth his black, his gloomy Ideas, or chace away his meditative Spleen! Come ye balmy Influences, ye Beings breathing ineffable Delight and fair unclouded Peace, in all your radiant Beauties, and gild each dusky Scene of mortal Woe! Transported with the Knowledge of your Faithfulness and Truth, your natural Rectitude of Sentiment, your nice Discernment, and the Joys you diffuse around you, I, raptured, hail that great creating Power, whose Works were cheerless dark, till you were formed, for such a precious-valued Gift as you. It was then that lordly Man began to live, began to taste of Happiness, surpassed by none but that of Heaven itself! 'Twas you refined his gross material Frame, and taught the every Haert that meliorates our Souls; you are the Fountains whence all the  
*sweet*

*Sweet Civilities of Life* derive their Spring and Source! Pain, with all its writhing Pangs, its fell Distortions, vanishes before your gladdening Smiles; and carking Care, corroding Melancholy, with all its brooding Train of dark Chimeras, fly your enlivening Glances!

*Oh Woman! lovely Woman! Nature form'd you  
To temper Man, we had been Brutes without you.*

My Friend was no sooner restored to himself than, as if we were alternately to want each other's Aid, I drooped again, and resigned myself, with more Violence than before, to all the Gloom my dark Ideas spread around me; which went so far as to render me almost incapable even of Business, or common Conversation. My Master, good Man, who used all his Art to draw me from my untoward State, by Reason and Argument, and who partly guessed the Condition of my Mind, by what he had heard pass between me and his Son at several Times, thought he ought to neglect no longer informing my Father of my Situation, and his Fears of the Consequences; and accordingly wrote him Word, that if he thought the Country would contribute to restore me to myself, however he wanted me in *London*, I should have Liberty to return into *Yorkshire* for some Time. I was not apprized of this, till one Morning he gave me a Letter from Home, which came inclosed in an An-

swer to him ; which, when he gave me, he told me, he feared it contained some News that would be very shocking to me ; but put me in Mind, that we were with Patience to bear the Misfortunes Heaven permitted to fall upon us, and not by idle Murmurs against its Dispensations, or a too great Indulgence of Sorrow, to provoke still more its Displeasure. I was stunned with this Preface, but, oh ! Heaven and Earth, what was my Situation, when I read the following Lines ?

MY DEAR SON,

**W**HEN I reflect upon the Vanity and Frailty of all mortal Joys, the Uncertainty of Life, the Pains we daily, hourly, struggle with, the Damp that succeeds our full blown Hopes, and the Brevity of our Existence here, how much I despise the Avidity and Eagerness we express in our worldly Pursuits ? *Man that is born of a Woman hath but a short Time to live, and is full of Misery,* is the Sentence that awaits us at our Births, and we feel the fatal Effects of it, thro' the whole Course of our Pilgrimage. Let us then be resigned to the Disposal of that Being, who orders every Thing aright, *and whose Ways are past finding out ;* let us press forward to the End of our Race, and not suffer the Accidents, that befall us here, to disconcert us in our Pursuits of a happier and better State, which surely awaits us at the appointed Time.

Time. Let us reflect that we are formed for such Purposes in this Life, as immoderate Grief and overbearing Sorrow will unfit us for; and that we commit the greatest of Crimes, if we incapacitate ourselves for those Uses for which Providence has designed us. You are young, you are capable of being serviceable to yourself and others, God has given you an upright Mind and an understanding Heart; strive to exercise those Gifts in a proper Manner, by applying yourself to the Duties of your Profession. I command you to do so as a Father, I exhort you as a Divine, I conjure you as a Christian, and I call upon you as a Philosopher! Oh, my Son! I must notwithstanding confess my Weakness as a Man, and feel for you all the Pains the mournful Intelligence I am going to give you will occasion you! Your poor *Louisa* is no more—a fatal Illness carried her to the Joys of Immortality, near a Fortnight ago,—in *Somersetshire*. All the Country mourns the Loss of so much Goodness and Perfection, and your poor Mother is inconsolable on her own Account, and distracted for Fear of the Consequences it may produce to you. We received this Advice from Sir *Walter* himself, who says now, he wishes some Things had not happened, which he fears gave her great Uneasiness: He seems to feel all the Grief that a Father must feel on such an Occasion, and as he, of his own Accord, sent for me to acquaint me



sition, the Starts of the bewildered Madman foaming in his Fits of Frenzy, methinks, could be no more than a Picture of what I felt at the Reading of this Letter, which soon flung me into a violent Fever, in the Deliriums of which, I incessantly called out upon my lovely and unfortunate *Louisa*. I recovered indeed, by the Strength of my Constitution, the Care of my Physicians, and the kind Attendance of the Family, which was involved in more Grief on my Account, than on Account of their own Misfortunes: But my Mind, quite jaded and fatigued, sunk into a State of stupid Quietism, and I barely moved as it were by Clockwork; and yet, that I might have still an added Weight of Affliction, about this Time, my dearest Master, pressed on every Side by his Creditors, was forced to consent to a *Statute of Bankruptcy*, in which his Son was joined. How severely, with what Fortitude this good Man behaved under so grievous a Calamity, would shame Description; he gave Way to no fretful Repinings, but seemed to meet the Ruin of his Affairs, with a Composure that astonished every one that knew the Happiness and Prosperity he had fallen from! If he had any great Concern, it was on my Friend's Account, who, by this mortifying Stroke, was reduced to a Necessity of beginning the World anew, and who felt more pungent Sorrow than can be expressed. I was so afflicted at the ill



Fortune of this well beloved Family, with whose Fate my own was so linked, that I was incapable either of giving or receiving Comfort; and my Master even descended so far, as to endeavour to moderate the Transports of my Sorrow, with a Tenderneſs that only ſerved to encrease my Trouble. When the Commiſſioners had concluded their Proceedings, every Creditor received ſixteen Shillings in the Pound, and were ſo affected with the Fairneſs, Juſtice, and Equity of Mr. *Diaper's* Proceedings, and the Regularity of his Accounts, that they proffered to take Half the Sum, if he would again enter into Trade; but he was now advanced in Years, and expreſſed ſo much Averſion to Launching out again into an Ocean of Difficulties, that they found it in vain to perſuade him, and therefore made my Friend a Preſent of Three hundred Guineas, in Token of their Reſpect. My Maſter had ſtill his Wife's Jointure to live upon, which he ſaid would be abundantly ſufficient to make the Remainder of his Days happy, in a Retreat, free from the Noiſe, Hurry, and Uncertainties of the buſy Life he had led, and which now he was quite ſick of; 'twas near 200*l.* per *Ann.* on which the Creditors could form no Pretenſions, and indeed were ſo far from doing it, that they made his Lady a Preſent of great Part of her Plate, and other valuable Moveables. When all the infernal Hurry of this Affair was over, my  
Maſter

Master called me to him one Morning, and thus addressed me: "My dear *Thompson*, you see the  
 " End of all my Pains and Care to provide, as I  
 " intended to do, for your Friend, and the Disap-  
 " pointments that have ruined my Schemes of  
 " Happiness; and that now I have left but just  
 " enough in the World to live in a genteel Privacy  
 " with my Family: Alas! my Dear, one of my  
 " greatest Troubles springs from the Knowledge  
 " I have, that I can't do the Justice I intended to  
 " your Merit, Fidelity, and the Affection you have  
 " ever shewn to me and mine, which, how-  
 " ever, I hope Heaven will graciously reward, in  
 " the future Course of your Life." Here the  
 good Man wept, and my Tears flowed without  
 Intermision: I could just bring out, "Oh! Sir,—  
 " you are too kind;—I don't deserve a Thought  
 " of your's should be thrown away upon me;  
 " your Misfortunes press me too hard! I shall ne-  
 " ver overcome them. Say not so, Child, I be-  
 " seech you, he replied," and, after some Pause,  
 went on thus, "I had fondly hoped to have  
 " made you for ever one of my Family, as you  
 " know, by taking you into the Business, which  
 " I should then have retired from, and left to  
 " you and my Son, whose Love to you is greater  
 " than that of a Brother; but you see Providence  
 " has otherwise disposed of Events, and we must  
 " rest-contented. My Son, I find, is quite averse

“ to following his Business, and I am making  
 “ Interest to get him to go to the *East-Indies*, in  
 “ Quality of one of the Company’s *Supercargoes* ;  
 “ in which Post he imagines he may have an Op-  
 “ portunity of acquiring another Fortune, sufficient  
 “ to make him happy with the young Lady you  
 “ are acquainted with. I will ever study to do  
 “ you, my Dear, all the Service I am capable of ;  
 “ and my Interest in the World, I thank God,  
 “ is not in the least affected by my late Disaster.  
 “ I am sensible you must wait your good Father’s  
 “ Pleasure, before you can determine as to your  
 “ Destination ; and, till you hear from him, let  
 “ my House in the Country be your Home : I  
 “ here give you up your Indenture, and set you  
 “ free from all Obligations of Servitude ; you  
 “ have behaved too well for me to deny you  
 “ the little Time that is to run of the seven  
 “ Years, and I would not oblige you to serve  
 “ any one else as an Apprentice. I hope your  
 “ Mind will recover its former Serenity, and I  
 “ advise you to take Care of your Conduct, see-  
 “ ing, if you enter into Business, as I suppose you  
 “ intend, you will find a fair Character will ever  
 “ be your greatest Good in all the Dealings you  
 “ will be engaged in. You are now your own  
 “ Master, and I hope you will behave in such a  
 “ Manner, as to be an Honour and Credit to me,  
 “ a Blessing to your Parents, and of Service to  
 “ Mankind.”

“Mankind.” My Heart was so full, I could return no other Answer, than my kissing his Hand, and bathing it with my Tears; and the Idea of the total Loss of my Friend’s Company (for I had never heard him mention his Design of going Abroad) was more than I could well bear. My Mistress and her Son soon after entered the Room, and gave me Joy of my Freedom; which I informed them was not a State at all different from what I had ever enjoyed, from the first Minute I was bound Apprentice, by their Kindness and Goodness. Mr. Diaper would provide a Supper upon the Occasion, and we spent the Night as agreeably as we could be supposed to do after all the late Occurrences.

## C H A P. XXXII.

*Mr. Diaper discovers his Purpose to Thompson.—He takes Leave of Miss Bellair.—Is accompanied to Gravesend by Thompson and Prig —Their tender Farewel.—He embarks for China.—Meets with an old Acquaintance at Blackwall.—Her Story, and Death.—They save a Woman from drowning.—Who she proves to be.—Sequel of her Story.*

AS soon as my Friend and myself were alone, I poured out my Complaints of his Unkindness to me, in designing to leave me alone and forlorn,

forlorn, to tempt the Rage of angry Seas, and tempestuous Skies, with all the Dangers of unusual Climates: He told me he had resolved not to apprise me of it till he was sure of the Time of his going, as he could not bear to anticipate my Uneasiness; that he had great Conflicts with himself, before he came to the Resolution of going Abroad, but found it the readiest Way to regain the State he had lost, and to make himself, and his charming *Bellair*, happy. I told him I thought he had no Occasion to attempt, by this Way, to acquire a Fortune; that he might be sure of Miss *Suky*'s venturing all for his Sake, and that, as my Father would, no doubt, put me into Trade with five or six Thousand Pounds, which should be employed in our mutual Behoof; with his Father's Sett of Customers, and our Affiduity, we might soon be in a Condition not to be despised. He embraced me at this Offer, but desired me not to dissuade him from his Resolution; which only gave him Pain, as he was to part from the Object of his Wishes, so dear a Friend, and such good Parents; and then resuming a Vivacity, which had been long banished from him, cried out, Come, my dear Boy, I presage that we shall both yet be completely happy, if you can but forget one fatal Stroke, which I hope you will, before I see you again. I was obliged, at length, to acquiesce, with a sorrowful Heart, to his Resolves, and attended him

him to take Leave of Miss *Bellair*, who was come to Town a few Days since with her Brother and his Family, and he had already visited them, and reluctantly brought her to consent to his Going. He was to embark in two Days Time, and was on the Morrow to take his Leave of the Directors, who had appointed him a very good Station, that of *Canton* in *China*. Their Adieu was too tender for even the Standers-by to support, with dry Eyes; and, after Vows of eternal Truth and Constancy, they parted, but both of them, as well as Mr. *Bellair* and his Spouse, insisted I should visit them as often as I possibly could; which I promised, with a great deal of Pleasure. The Parting between him and his Parents was little less tender, and he set out the next Evening with myself and *Prig*, who were resolved not to leave him till we saw the Ship under Sail. We arrived at *Gravesend* at about Ten o'Clock at Night, and he found at the *Swan*, the rest of his Brother Supercargoes, who were appointed to the same Ship, the —, of thirty-two Guns, and 150 Men, commanded by Captain *Friendly*. We spent two Days here very agreeably, save that the continual Gloom of my Mind gave my Friend great Uneasiness, who charged *Prig* to be as much with me as possible, and endeavour, all he could, to divert my Melancholy; telling him he should expect his Friend at his Hands, safe and well, at his Return. *Prig* had indeed behaved,



haved, ever since our Arrival from *Yorkshire*, with so much Friendship and Respect, and his Character was so much altered, that we both conceived a great Value for him; which was heightened by the disinterested Concern he had shewed in the late Transactions of my Master, who had been of great Service to him in his Profession. The Wind shifting favourably, and every Thing ready for Sailing, now began the Task of Parting, which we were both incapable to support with the Decency we had resolved to support it; we wept, and betrayed so much real Sorrow, as amazed all the Standers-by; rough, unpolished Seamen, who were not capable of the delicate Sensations, so warm and lively a Friendship as ours was capable of inspiring. Far as our Eyes could strain, we marked each other, till the lessening Ship intirely mocked the Sight. A thousand Times I implored the merciful Ruler of the World to return him in Safety to his Friends Embraces, and his native Country, happy and prosperous! We returned to *London* by Water, the next Morning, in a Boat we had hired for that Purpose; and, passing by *Blackwall*, our Curiosity led us on Board a Ship that was receiving the Criminals, from three or four covered Lighters, for Transportation to the *American Colonies*. As we were attentively viewing these unhappy, hardened Wretches, as they came up the Ship's Side, a Woman, in tattered Weeds, all pale and wan,  
with

with the Symptoms of Death in her Face, who was forced to be supported up the Side by several Sailors, arrested my Sight, and presented the Remains of a Face, that, methought, I very well remembered, and soon recollected to be that of the perfidious and designing *Nanny*, who had served me such a Trick, in Conjunction with *Packer*, and laid the Foundation of all my former Disquiets. Her Condition, notwithstanding, gave me Pain, and she no sooner fixed her Eyes on me, than she fainted away. As soon as she recovered her Senses, I would have gone away ; but she called me with a weak and hollow Voice, and desired to speak to me. I approached her, and the poor Creature fell upon her Knees, and hoped I would forgive her for the Injuries she had formerly done me ; to which I was going to reply, when one of the Officers offered me the Use of his Cabbin, if the young Woman had any Thing to say to me ; which I accepted, and she crawled in after us, as well as she could, where she addressed herself to me in this Manner : “ Oh ! Sir, how shall I look you  
 “ in the Face, after what you know of me ! that  
 “ Villain, that first debauched me, soon after you  
 “ so justly abandoned me, left me in Want and  
 “ Misery, which obliged me to seek a Subsistence,  
 “ by the most abhorred of Ways, that of Pro-  
 “ stitution at an House of ill Fame in *Covent-*  
 “ *Garden*, where he had before often carried me,  
 “ and



“ and would have persuaded me to go to lodge.  
“ Here I was long subject to the loathsome Em-  
“ braces of all Comers and Goers, till a vile Dis-  
“ temper obliged me to undergo a Salivation ;  
“ which, being unskilfully managed, left me in a  
“ most deplorable Condition, having totally ruined  
“ my Complexion and Constitution. Perfect  
“ Want induced me, one Night, to pick a Gen-  
“ tleman’s Pocket, who passed thro’ the *Strand* ;  
“ for which Fact I was tried at the *Old Bailey*, and  
“ am ordered for Transportation, to which you  
“ may perceive I am going, with the rest of these  
“ unhappy Creatures. I am so ill now, that I can  
“ scarce support myself, whilst I tell you this, and  
“ hope a few Hours will ease me of all my Mi-  
“ series together, by Death ! I trust I have made  
“ my Peace with Heaven ; and, if you will mer-  
“ cifully forgive me, I shall die with Satisfaction.”  
She wept, and I told her I freely forgave her, and  
hoped, as she had repented of her Crimes, Heaven  
would forgive her too. She shewed the utmost  
Joy at this, and, whilst some Refreshments were  
providing, which we ordered for her, I asked  
her if her Father and Mother were alive ; but she  
informed me they were both dead, and she fear-  
ed had broke their Hearts, at the bad Courses she  
had taken ; the Remembrance of which drew  
a Sigh, which seemed to proceed from the Bot-  
tom of her Heart. We both gave her Money,  
and

and hoped she would live to make Amends for her Faults, and once more be happy ; which Words were hardly out of our Mouths, when she dropped down before us, and, upon stooping to raise her up, we found the unfortunate Woman had breathed her last.

So sudden an Exit surpris'd us, and we could not help reflecting on the Incident, as a fresh Mark of the Superintendency of Providence, which had directed me to call on Board that Vessel, by which I was able to speak Peace and Comfort to the Soul of this departing Instance of its Displeasure.

Our Boat had scarce carried us half a Mile from this melancholy Scene of human Wretchedness, when another Boat, in passing us, ran foul of a Ship's Hawser, and overset, before we had even an Opportunity to fix our Eyes upon it, so much as to discern if there were any Passengers in it ; but we ordered our Waterman to lie upon his Oars, to be of what Service we possibly could, if there were any Persons in Danger. Presently a Woman popped her Head above Water, at some Distance from our Stern ; and, at the same Time, the Waterman came up, and began to swim towards us, and we soon took him in, whilst the Woman sunk again, before Assistance could be given her, there happening to be no Boat but ours near us, at the Time this unfortunate Accident happened. We watched earnestly her rising the second Time, which

which she did just at our Boat's Side, when I seized her by the Arm, and supported her, with her Head above Water, till *Prig* and the Waterman came to my Assistance, and helped me to draw her in. She happened to be the only Passenger, so that we applied ourselves to bring her to her Senses, and held her up till she had voided a prodigious Quantity of Water, which she had swallowed ; and then she began to revive, Mr. *Prig* having, with a Penknife, very dexterously opened a Vein in her Arm. We ordered our Man to row to the *Surry* Shore, and, landing, the two Watermen bore her between them to a Public-house, where we got the Landlady to put her to Bed, and were resolved to wait till she was somewhat recovered of her Weakness, and to see her Home, as she appeared, by her Habit, to be no mean Woman.

Towards Noon she got up, and came down Stairs into the Room we were sitting in, and returned us her Thanks in a very grateful Manner, for having saved her Life. I discovered, the Minute I heard the Voice, somewhat, methought, in the Tone and Manner of it, that was a little known to my Ears ; and when, thereupon, I looked her steadily in the Face, we both mutually betrayed Signs of Amazement, I discovering my *Vauxhall* Harlot once more, and she the Benefactor who had relieved her, after her being ducked by the Mob a long Time before. The Confusion she

was

was in, and the Alteration her half-drowned Condition had made in her Face and Cloaths, when she was in the Boat, had hindered my Recognition of her then; but now, I cried out, What, Mrs. *Tripsey* once more obliged to me? adding, Why, my Friend *Prig*, this, and the Adventure before, would sound very romantically, if they were to be related; however, I'm glad to see you, Madam, so well habited, and hope you have forsaken your old Courses. She was so astonished, she could not speak for some Minutes; but, at length, assumed Courage, and addressed us thus:

· SEQUEL of the Story of Mrs. TRIPSEY.

**N**Otwithstanding the bad Usage, Sir, you received by my Connivance, Heaven has made you my Benefactor and Saviour; at once you have saved me from present and future Destruction, for your Goodness, more than any Thing else, determined me to forsake the vicious Courses I was engaged in, and now you have given me my Life: Would to God, Sir, it were in my Power to make you a proper Return for these Blessings; but, as I am sensible of the Generosity of your Mind, I know it will please you to hear that an unfortunate Fellow-creature is raised, by your Means, from the lowest Depth of Misery to Happiness.

No Creature sure could be in greater Distress of Body, or under greater Tortures of Soul, than  
I was,

I was, when you saw me so cruelly used by the barbarous Hands of the unrelenting Mob. You generously relieved me from the first, and your kind Exhortations and the Resolutions I made, consequent thereto, in great Measure, calmed the latter. All that Day, I chose out the most unfrequented Fields, and, by walking about, dried my Cloaths upon my Back, mean while pondering what I should take to for my future Subsistence, and to support me free from the wretched Ways I had used, and the Company who had been my Ruin. I came of good Parents, who died some Years before my Lapse from Goodness, leaving only myself and a Brother, who was now I knew a substantial Farmer in the County of *Middlesex*; but he had shewn so much Detestation of me, on account of the Courses I had taken, that I found no Encouragement in the Thought of flinging myself upon his Mercy and Protection. I was musing thus in my Way to Town, and by the Slowness of my Motion, and Want of Attention to my Way, to be sure looked like one of those Creatures I had formerly been; when a Man on Horseback, in the Road, called to me in a familiar Strain, and asked me, How I did, and if I would grant him a certain Favour? I turned my Eyes up at the Sound of the Voice, and perceived it was the very Brother I had been thinking of so intently, tho' I was certain, from the great Alteration a Length of Time had made, he could  
not

not possibly know me. I thought this Meeting was providential, and was willing to humour the Matter, to see what Lengths he might possibly go, before he knew me ; and accordingly with a shy Air attempted to cross the Road, at some Distance below him, on which he alighted, and, catching me by the Arm, was going to use me somewhat roughly, for no Passengers were coming by ; when I cried, Come, Brother, you are attempting to commit a greater Crime than you imagine. These Words, and the Sound of my Voice, struck him all on an Heap, and he was some Time before he came to himself, when I fell on my Knees, told him my forlorn Condition, my late praise-worthy Resolutions, and begged him to believe me, and shield me from Vice and Poverty !

He melted, at length, and, raising me, carried me to a Public-house at some Distance, where he displayed all that Love and Affection, which, tho' it may be for a Time stifled, by little Ruffles and Accidents of Life, yet must still, one Time or other, revive again, in the Bosoms of near Relations, let their Misconduct be ever so notorious, and got an Horse there for me to ride Home with him upon. I understood his Wife had been dead near a Twelve-month, and had left him two Children, the Care of whom and his House became my Province ; where I have lived ever since, in the utmost Calm and Content, hoping God will accept my sincere

cere Repentance, and Amendment, and graciously pardon the numerous Crimes I have committed. I was going to *Greenwich*, when the late unfortunate Accident happened to me, which you, Sir, and that Gentleman so generously relieved me from, for which I shall pray for eternal Blessings on your Heads.

We were pleased with this short Narration, caressed her, and encouraged her in her Pursuit of Virtue and Sobriety; and, after Dinner, saw her into another Boat, in which she pursued her Voyage, and we, full of the odd Adventures we had met with, returned to *London*.

*The End of the FIRST VOLUME.*



By the KING's Authority,

*This Day is published,*

Price 3 l. 14 s. Bound and Lettered.

(Dedicated to the Right Hon. the Earl of MACCLESFIELD)  
The second Edition, in Two Volumes, Folio.

Illustrated with a Hundred and Six Folio Copper-plates,  
engraved by the best Hands, Eleven of which Plates,  
relating to Natural History, are finely coloured.

# A New and Universal Dictionary O F ARTS and SCIENCES.

Containing not only an Explanation of the various  
Terms made Use of in the several Arts and Sciences, but also  
whatever else is requisite to render those Branches of Literature  
themselves easy and familiar to the meanest Capacities. With  
an Introductory Preface, tracing the Progress of Literature  
from the earliest Ages, and enumerating the various Improve-  
ments made therein at different Periods of Time. Extracted  
from the best Authors, Transactions, Memoirs, &c. in several  
Languages.

Printed for J. Hinton, at the King's Arms, in Pater-noster  
Row, and sold by all the Bookfellers of Great-Britain and  
Ireland.

††† The Dictionary, in One Volume Folio, may be had  
alone, neatly Bound and Lettered, Price 2 l. 10 s. The Sup-  
plement, neatly Bound and Lettered, 1 l. 4 s.

---

*This Day is published,*

The Fifth Edition, Price 2 s. 6 d.

## D I R E C T I O N S

F O R T H E

Profitable Reading of the Holy Scriptures.

T O G E T H E R

With some Observations for the Confirming their  
Divine Authority, and Illustrating the Difficulties  
thereof.

By W. LOWTH, B. D. Prebendary of Winchester.

Printed for J. Hinton, in Pater noster Row.



By the KING's Authority,

*This Day is published,*

In Two Vols. in Folio, neatly bound and lettered, Price 3 l. 3 s.  
Printed for J. Hinton, in Pater-noster Row.

Mr. *STACKHOUSE*'s  
**HISTORY of the HOLY BIBLE,**  
FROM THE  
Creation of the World, to the Establishment of  
Christianity.

By JESUS CHRIST, and his APOSTLES.

With Answers to most of the controverted Questions, and Dissertations upon the most remarkable Passages. To which are added Notes, explaining difficult Texts, rectifying Mis-translations, and reconciling seeming Contradictions, &c.—Illustrated with One Hundred and Four useful and ornamental Maps and Sculptures, engraved by the best Hands from original Paintings.

N. B. To accommodate those Persons who have not yet taken in Mr. Stackhouse's History, they may begin with Number I. and continue the same weekly.

---

By the KING's Authority,

*This Day is published,*

In one Volume Folio, Price 1 l. 10 s.

**A COMPLETE BODY**  
OF  
**Speculative and Practical Divinity.**  
Consisting of FIVE PARTS.

I. Of the Being, Nature, and Attributes of God, and of the Evidences of Divine Revelation. II. Of the Works of Creation and Providence. III. Of the most remarkable Transactions, from the Beginning of the World, to the Coming of Christ; with proper Dissertations upon each. IV. Of the Mysteries of our most Holy Faith. V. Of the great Precepts of Moral and Evangelical Righteousness.

The whole extracted from the best Ancient and Modern Writers, but chiefly from the Works of such as have been reputed the most able Divines, and celebrated Preachers amongst us.

By the Rev. THOMAS STACKHOUSE, A. M.  
Late Vicar of Beenham, in Berks.

Printed for J. Hinton, in Pater-noster Row.



